



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

the 1990s, the government has been able to reduce the number of people who are uninsured from 10.5 million in 1990 to 6.5 million in 2000.

As a result of the 1990s reforms, the government has been able to reduce the number of people who are uninsured from 10.5 million in 1990 to 6.5 million in 2000. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

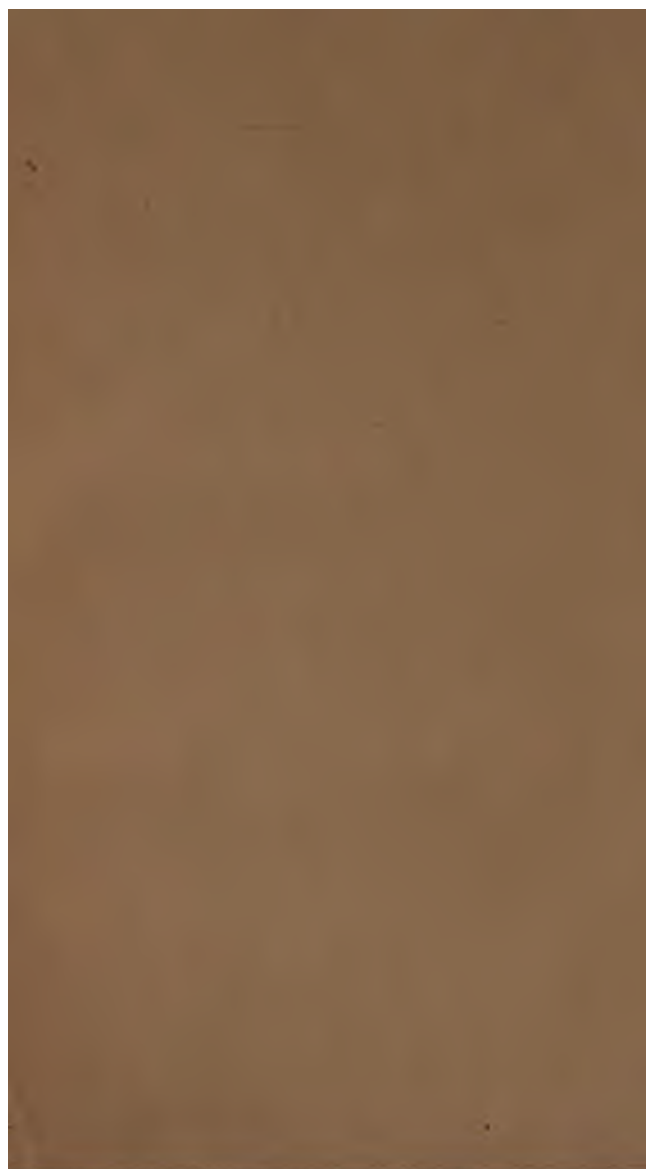
The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990. The number of people who are uninsured has decreased by 38 percent since 1990.

86.18.33

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY



GIVEN IN MEMORY OF
LIONEL DE JERSEY HARVARD
CLASS OF 1915
KILLED IN ACTION
BOISLEUX-AU-MONT, FRANCE
MARCH 30, 1918





PARADISE LOST.

A POEM,

IN TWELVE BOOKS.

BY JOHN MILTON.

STEREOTYPED BY T. H. CARTER & CO.

BOSTON:
PUBLISHED AT THE
WATER STREET BOOKSTORE.

1833.

14486.18.33

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
IN MEMORY OF
LIONEL DE JERSEY HARVARD
CLASS OF 1915

May 14, 1927

20
13

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK I.

The first Book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed: Then touches the prime cause of his Fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of Heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the Poem hastens into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now falling into Hell, described here, not in the centre (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed,) but in a place of utter darkness fittest called Chaos: Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunderstruck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him; They confer of their miserable fall; Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded. They rise; their numbers; array of battle; their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in Heaven; for, that Angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep: The infernal peer there sit in council.

Or Man's first disobedience, and the fruit
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat, 5
Sing, heavenly Muse, that on the secret top
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,
In the beginning how the Heavens and Earth
Rose out of Chaos: Or if Sihon hill 10
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flow'd
Fast by the oracle of God; I thence
Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,
That with no middle flight intends to soar

Above the Aonian mount, while it pursues 15
 Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.
 And chiefly Thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer
 Before all temples the upright heart and pure,
 Instruct me, for Thou know'st ; Thou from the first
 Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread 20
 Dovelike sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,
 And madest it pregnant : What in me is dark,
 Illumine ; what is low, raise and support ;
 That to the height of this great argument
 I may assert Eternal Providence, 25
 And justify the ways of God to men.
 Say first, for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,
 Nor the deep tract of Hell ; say first, what cause
 Moved our grand Parents, in that happy state,
 Favour'd of Heaven so highly, to fall off 30
 From their Creator, and transgress his will
 For one restraint, lords of the world besides ?
 Who first seduced them to that foul revolt ?
 The infernal Serpent ; he it was, whose guile,
 Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceived 35
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride
 Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host
 Of rebel Angels ; by whose aid, aspiring
 To set himself in glory above his peers,
 He trusted to have equal'd the Most High, 40
 If he opposed ; and, with ambitious aim
 Against the throne and monarchy of God,
 Raised impious war in Heaven, and battle proud,
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from the ethereal sky, 45
 With hideous ruin and combustion, down
 To bottomless perdition ; there to dwell
 In adamant chains and penal fire,
 Who durst defy the Omnipotent to arms.
 Nine times the space that measures day and night 50
 To mortal men, he with his horrid crew
 Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulf,

PARADISE LOST.

5

Confounded, though immortal : But his doom
 Reserved him to more wrath ; for now the thought
 Both of lost happiness, and lasting pain, 55
 Torments him : round he throws his baleful eyes,
 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay
 Mix'd with obdurate pride and steadfast hate
 At once, as far as Angels ken, he views
 The dismal situation waste and wild : 60
 A dungeon horrible on all sides round
 As one great furnace flamed ; yet from those flames
 No light ; but rather darkness visible
 Served only to discover sights of woe,
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace 65
 And rest can never dwell ; hope never comes
 That comes to all ; but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
 With ever burning sulphur unconsumed .
 Such place Eternal Justice had prepared 70
 For those rebellious ; here their prison ordain'd
 In utter darkness, and their portion set
 As far removed from God and light of Heaven
 As from the centre thrice to the utmost pole.
 O, how unlike the place from whence they fell ! 75
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
 He soon discerns ; and weltering by his side
 One next himself in power, and next in crime,
 Long after known in Palestine, and named 80
 Beëlzebub. To whom the Archenemy,
 And thence in Heaven call'd Satan, with bold words
 Breaking the horrid silence, thus began.
 If thou be he ; but O, how fallen ! how chang'd
 From him, who, in the happy realms of light, 85
 Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine
 Myriads though bright ! If he whom mutual league,
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise,
 Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd

In equal ruin ! Into what pit thou seest,
 From what height fallen ; so much the stronger proved
 He with his thunder - and till then who knew
 The force of those dire arms ? Yet not for those,
 Nor what the potent victor in his rage 95
 Can else inflict, do I repent or change,
 Though changed in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,
 And high disdain from sense of injured merit,
 That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,
 And to the fierce contention brought along 100
 Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd,
 That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,
 His utmost power with adverse power opposed
 In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,
 And shook his throne. What though the field be lost ?
 All is not lost ; the unconquerable will, 105
 And study of revenge, immortal hate,
 And courage never to submit or yield,
 And what is else not to be overcome ;
 That glory never shall his wrath or might 110
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
 With suppliant knee, and deify his power,
 Who from the terror of this arm so late
 Doubted his empire ; that were low indeed,
 That were an ignominy, and shame beneath 115
 This downfal : since, by fate, the strength of Gods
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail ;
 Since through experience of this great event
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanced,
 We may with more successful hope resolve 120
 To wage, by force or guile, eternal war
 Irreconcilable to our grand Foe,
 Who now triumphs, and, in the excess of joy
 Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of Heaven.
 So spake the apostate Angel, though in pain, 125
 Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair :
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.
 O Prince, O Chief of many throned Powers,

PARADISE LOST.

7

That led the embattled Seraphim to war
 Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds 130
 Fearless endanger'd Heaven's perpetual king,
 And put to proof his high supremacy,
 Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ;
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,
 That with sad overthrow, and foul defeat, 135
 Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
 As far as Gods and heavenly essences
 Can perish : for the mind and spirit remains
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns, 140
 Though all our glory extinct, and happy state
 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
 But what if he our Conqueror (whom I now
 Of force believe Almighty, since no less
 Than such could have o'erpower'd such force as ours).
 Have left us this our spirit and strength entire 146
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls
 By right of war, whate'er his business be, 150
 Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,
 Or do his errands in the gloomy deep ;
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel
 Strength undiminish'd, or eternal being,
 To undergo eternal punishment ? 155
 Whereto with speedy words the Archfiend replied.
 Fallen cherub ! to be weak is miserable,
 Doing or suffering : but of this be sure,
 To do aught good never will be our task,
 But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160
 As being the contrary to his high will
 Whom we resist. If then his providence
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,
 And out of good e'ill to find means of evil ; 165
 Which ofttimes may succeed so as perhaps

Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb
 His inmost counsels from their destined aim.
 But see! the angry victor hath recall'd
 His ministers of vengeance and pursuit **170**
 Back to the gates of Heaven: the sulphurous hall,
 Shot after us in storm, o'erblown, hath laid
 The fiery surge, that from the precipice
 Of Heaven received us falling; and the thunder,
 Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage, **175**
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now
 To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.
 Let us not slip the occasion, whether scorn,
 Or satiate fury, yield it from our Foe.
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild, **180**
 The seat of desolation, void of light,
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves;
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there; **185**
 And, reassembling our afflicted Powers,
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend
 Our Enemy; our own loss how repair
 How overcome this dire calamity;
 What reinforcement we may gain from hope; **190**
 If not, what resolution from despair.

Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate
 With head uplift above the wave, and eyes
 That sparkling blazed; his other parts besides
 Prone on the flood, extended long and large, **195**
 Lay floating many a rood; in bulk as huge
 As whom the fables name of monstrous size,
 Titanian, or Earth-born, that war'd on Jove
 Briarëos or Typhon, whom the den
 By ancient Tarsus held; or that seabeast **200**
 Leviathan, which God of all his works
 Created hugest that swim the ocean stream:
 Him, haply, slumbering on the Norway foam
 The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff

PARADISE LOST.

9

Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell, 205
 With fixed anchor in his scaly rind,
 Moors by his side under the lee, while night
 Invests the sea, and wished morn delays :
 So stretch'd out huge in length the Archfiend lay,
 Chain'd on the burning lake : nor ever thence 210
 Had risen, or heaved his head ; but that the will
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven
 Left him at large to his own dark designs ;
 That with reiterated crimes he might
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought 215
 Evil to others ; and, enraged, might see
 How all his malice served but to bring forth
 Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shown
 On Man by him seduced ; but on himself
 Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance, pour'd. 220
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool
 His mighty stature : on each hand the flames,
 Driven backward, slope their pointing spires, and roll'd
 In billows, leave i' the midst a horrid vale.
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight 225
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,
 That felt unusual weight ; till on dry land
 He lights, if it were land that over burn'd
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire :
 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230
 Of subterranean wind transports a hill
 Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side
 Of thundering Ætna, whose combustible
 And fuel'd entrails thence conceiving fire,
 Sublimed with mineral fury, aid the winds, 235
 And leave a singed bottom all involved
 With stench and smoke : such resting found the sole
 Of unblest feet. Him follow'd his next mate :
 Both glorying to have scaped the Stygian flood
 As Gods, and by their own recover'd strength, 240
 Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.
 Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,

Said then the lost Archangel, this the seat
 That we must change for Heaven; this mournful gloom
 For that celestial light? Be it so! since he, 245
 Who now is Sov'reign, can dispose and bid
 What shall be right: furthest from him is best,
 Whom reason hath equal'd, force hath made supreme
 Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,
 Where joy for ever dwells! Hail horrors! hail, 250
 Infernal world! And thou, profoundest Hell,
 Receive thy new possessor! one who brings
 A mind not to be changed by place or time:
 The mind is its own place, and in itself
 Can make a Heaven of Hell, a Hell of Heaven. 255
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be; all but less than he
 Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least
 We shall be free; the Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy; will not drive us hence: 260
 Here we may reign secure, and, in my choice,
 To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell:
 Better to reign in Hell than serve in Heaven!
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 The associates and copartners of our loss 265
 Lie thus astonished on the oblivious pool,
 And call them not to share with us their part
 In this unhappy mansion; or once more
 With rallied arms to try what may be yet
 Regain'd in Heaven, or what more lost in Hell? 270
 So Satan spake; and him Beëlzebub
 Thus answer'd. Leader of those armies bright,
 Which but the Omnipotent none could have foil'd!
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft 275
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge
 Of battle when it raged, in all assaults
 Their surest signal, they will soon resume
 New courage and revive; though now they lie
 Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280

As we erewhile, astounded and amazed :
 No wonder, fallen such a pernicious height.
 He scarce had ceased, when the superior Fiend
 Was moving toward the shore : his ponderous shield,
 Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round, 285
 Behind him cast ; the broad circumference
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
 Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views
 At Evening from the top of Fesolè,
 Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290
 Rivers, or mountains, in her spotty globe.
 His spear, to equal which the tallest pine
 Hewn on Norwegian hills, to be the mast
 Of some great ammiral, were but a wand,
 He walk'd with, to support uneasy steps 295
 Over the burning marle, not like those steps
 On Heaven's azure ; and the torrid clime
 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire :
 Nathless he so endured, till on the beach
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd 300
 His legions, Angel forms, who lay entranced
 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks,
 In Vallantrosa, where the Etrurian shades,
 High overarch'd, imbower ; or scatter'd sedge
 Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion arm'd 305
 Hath vex'd the Red Seacoast, whose waves o'erthrew
 Eusiris and his Memphian chivalry,
 While with perfidious hatred they pursued
 The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld
 From the safe shore their floeking carcasses 310
 And broken chariot wheels : so thick bestrown,
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,
 Under amazement of their hideous change.
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep
 Of Hell resounded ! Princes, Potentates, 315
 Warriors, the flower of Heaven ! once yours, now lost,
 If such astonishment as this can seize
 Eternal Spirits ; or have ye chosen this place

After the toil of battle to repose
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 390
 To slumber here, as in the vales of Heaven?
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
 To adore the Conqueror! who now beholds
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood,
 With scatter'd arms and ensigns; till anon 395
 His swift pursuers from Heaven gates discern
 The advantage, and descending, tread us down
 Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fallen! 399

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung
 Upon the wing; as when men wont to watch
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.
 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight 395
 In which they were, nor the fierce pains not feel;
 Yet to their General's voice they soon obey'd,
 Innumerable. As when the potent rod
 Of Amram's son, in Egypt's evil day,
 Waved round the coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud 340
 Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,
 That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung
 Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile
 So numberless were those bad Angels seen
 Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell, 345
 'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires;
 Till, as a signal given, the uplifted spear
 Of their great Sultan, waving to direct
 Their course, in even balance down they light
 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain; 350
 A multitude, like which the populous North
 Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass
 Rhene or the Danaw; when her barbarous sons
 Came like a deluge on the South, and spread
 Beneath Gibraltar to the Libyan sands. 355
 Forthwith from every squadron, and each band,

The heads and leaders thither haste where stood
 Their great Commander ; Godlike shapes, and forms
 Excelling human ; princely Dignities ;
 And Powers that erst in Heaven sat on thrones ; 360
 Though of their names in heavenly records now
 Be no memorial ; blotted out and rased
 By their rebellion from the book of life.
 Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve 364
 Got them new names ; till, wandering o'er the earth,
 Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,
 By falsities and lies the greatest part
 Of mankind they corrupted to forsake
 God their creator, and the invisible
 Glory of him that made them to transform 370
 Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd
 With gay religions full of pomp and gold,
 And Devils to adore for Deities :
 Then were they known to men by various names
 And various idols through the Heathen world. 375
 Say, Muse, their names then known ; who first, who last,
 Roused from the slumber, on that fiery couch,
 At their great Emperor's call, as next in worth
 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,
 While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof. 380
 The chief were those, who from the pit of Hell
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix
 Their seats long after next the seat of God,
 Their altars by his altar ; Gods adored
 Among the nations round : and durst abide 385
 Jehovah thundering out of Sion, throned
 Between the cherubim ; yea, often placed
 Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,
 Abominations ; and with cursed things
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profaned, 390
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.
 First, Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood
 Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears ;
 Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud,

Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd through fire,
 To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite 396
 Worship'd in Rabba and her watery plain,
 In Argob and in Basan, to the stream
 Of utmost Arnon ; Nor content with such
 Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400
 Of Solomon he led by fraud to build
 His temple right against the temple of God
 On that opprobrious hill : and made his grove
 The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence
 And black Gehenna call'd, the type of Hell. 405
 Next, Chemos, the obscene dread of Moab's sons,
 From Aroer to Nebo, and the wild
 Of southmost Abarim ; in Hesebon
 And Horonaim, Seon's realm, beyond
 The flowery dale of Sibma clad with vines ; 410
 And Elealé to the Asphaltic pool.
 Fear his o'her name, when he enticed
 Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged 415
 Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove
 Of Moloch homicide ; lust hard by hate :
 Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.
 With these came they, who, from the bordering flood
 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts 420
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
 Of Baalim and Ashtaroth ; those male,
 These feminine ; For Spirits, when they please,
 Can either sex assume, or both ; so soft 425
 And uncompounded is their essence pure ,
 Not tied or manacled with joint or limb,
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh ; but, in what shape they choose,
 Dilated or condensed, bright or obscure,
 Can execute their aery purposes, 430
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.
 For those the race of Israel oft forsook

PARADISE LOST.

15

Their Living Strength, and unfrequented left
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
To bestial Gods ; for which their heads as low 435
Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear
Of despicable foes. With these in troop
Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd
Astarté, queen of Heaven, with crescent horns
To whose bright image nightly by the moon 440
Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs ;
In Sion also not unsung, where stood
Her temple on the offensive mountain, built
By that uxorious king, whose heart, though large,
Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell 445
To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,
Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured
The Syrian damsels to lament his fate
In amorous ditties all a summer's day ;
While smooth Adonis from his native rock 450
Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood
Of Thammuz yearly wounded : the love tale
Infected Sion's daughters with like heat ;
Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch
Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led, 455
His eye survey'd the dark idolatries
Of alienated Judah. Next came one
Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark
Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopp'd off
In his own temple, on the grunsel edge, 460
Where he fell flat, and shamed his worshippers :
Dagon his name, sea monster, upward man
And downward fish : yet had his temple high
Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast
Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon, 465
And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.
Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat
Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks
Of Abbana and P'harphar, lucid streams.
He also against the house of God was bold 470

A leper once he lost, and gain'd a king ;
 Ahaz, his sottish conqueror, whom he drew
 God's altar to disparage, and displace,
 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
 His odious offerings, and adore the Gods **475**
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd
 A crew, who, under names of old renown,
 Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abused
 Fanatic Egypt, and her priests to seek **480**
 Their wandering Gods disguised in brutish forms
 Rather than human. Nor did Israel scape
 The infection, when their borrow'd gold composed
 The calf in Oreb ; and the rebel king
 Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan, **485**
 Likening his Maker to the grazed ox ;
 Jehovah, who in one night, when he pass'd
 From Egypt marching, equal'd with one stroke
 Both her first-born and all her bleating Gods.
 Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd **490**
 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for itself: to him no temple stood
 Or altar smoked: yet who more oft than he
 In temples and at altars, when the priest
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd **495**
 With lust and violence the house of God ?
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,
 And injury and outrage : And when night **500**
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.
 Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night
 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door
 Exposed a matron, to avoid worse rape. **505**
 These were the prime in order, and in might ;
 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,
 The Ionian Gods, of Javan's issue ; held

Gods, yet confess'd later than Heaven and Earth,
 Their boasted parents : Titan, Heaven's first-born, 510
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seized
 By younger Saturn ; he from mightier Jove,
 His own and Rhea's son, like measure found ;
 So Jove usurping reign'd · these first in Crete
 And Ida known, thence on the snowy top 515
 Of cold Olympus ruled the middle air,
 Their highest Heaven ; or on the Delphian cliff,
 Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds
 Of Doric land ; or who with Saturn old
 Fled over Adria to the Hesperian fields, 520
 And o'er the Celtic roam'd the utmost isles.

All these and more came flocking ; but with looks
 Downcast and damp ; yet such wherein appear'd
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their Chief
 Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost 525
 In loss itself : which on his countenance cast
 Like doubtful hue : but he, his wonted pride
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth, not substance, gently raised
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears. 530
 Then straight commands, that at the warlike sound
 Of trumpets loud and clarions be uprear'd
 His mighty standard : that proud honour claim'd
 Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall ;
 Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd 535
 The imperial ensign ; which, full high advanced,
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,
 With gems and golden lustre rich emblaz'd,
 Seraphic arms and trophies ; all the while
 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds : 540
 At which the universal host up sent
 A shout, that tore Hell's concave, and beyond
 Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen
 Ten thousand banners rise into the air 545
 With orient colours waving · with them rose

A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms
 Appear'd, and serried shields in thick array
 Of depth immeasurable : Anon they move
 In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood **550**
 Of flutes and soft recorders ; such as raised
 To height of noblest temper heroes old
 Arming to battle ; and instead of rage
 Deliberate valour breathed, firm and unmoved
 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat ; **555**
 Nor wanting power to mitigate and suage
 With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase
 Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,
 Breathing united force, with fixed thought, **560**
 Moved on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil : and now
 Advanced in view they stand ; a horrid front
 Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise
 Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield ; **565**
 Awaiting what command their mighty Chief
 Had to impose : He through the armed files
 Darts his experienced eye, and soon traverse
 The whole battalion views ; their order due ;
 Their visages and stature as of Gods ; **570**
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart
 Distends with pride, and hardening in his strength
 Glories : for never, since created man,
 Met such imbodied force, as named with these
 Could merit more than that small infantry **575**
 Warr'd on by cranes ; though all the giant brood
 Of Phlegra with the heroic race were join'd
 That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side
 Mix'd with auxiliar Gods ; and what resounds
 In fable or romance of Uther's son **580**
 Begirt with British and Armoric knights ;
 And all who since, baptized or infidel,
 Jousted in Aspramont, or Montalban,
 Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond,

PARADISE LOST.

19

Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore, 585
 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell
 By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observed
 Their dread Commander; he, above the rest
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent, 590
 Stood like a tower: his form had yet not lost
 All her original brightness; nor appear'd
 Less than Archangel ruin'd, and the excess
 Of glory obscured: as when the sun, new risen,
 Looks through the horizontal misty air 595
 Shorn of his beams; or from behind the moon,
 In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds
 On half the nations, and with fear of change
 Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone
 Above them all the Archangel: but his face 600
 Deep scars of thunder had intrench'd; and ears
 Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows
 Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride
 Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast
 Signs of remorse and passion, to behold 605
 The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
 (Far other once beheld in bliss), condemn'd
 For ever now to have their lot in pain;
 Millions of Spirits for his fault amerced
 Of Heaven, and from eternal splendours flung 610
 For his revolt; yet faithful how they stood,
 Their glory wither'd: as when Heaven's fire
 Hath scathed the forest oaks, or mountain pine;
 With singed top their stately growth, though bare,
 Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepared 615
 To speak; whereat their doubled ranks they bend
 From wing to wing, and half enclose him round
 With all his peers: Attention held them mute.
 Thrice he essay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,
 Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last 620
 Words, interwove with sighs, found out their way.
 O Myriads of immortal Spirits! O Powers

Matchless, but with the Almighty! and that strife
 Was not inglorious, though the event was dire,
 As this place testifies, and this dire change 625
 Hateful to utter : but what power of mind,
 Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth
 Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,
 How such united force of Gods, how such
 As stood like these, could ever know repulse? 630
 For who can yet believe, though after loss,
 That all these puissant legions, whose exile
 Hath emptied Heaven, shall fail to reascend
 Self-raised, and repossess their native seat?
 For me, be witness all the host of Heaven, 635
 If counsels different, or dangers shunn'd
 By me have lost our hopes. But he, who reigns
 Monarch in Heaven, till then as one secure
 Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,
 Consent or custom; and his regal state 640
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,
 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own;
 So as not either to provoke, or dread
 New war, provoked: our better part remains 645
 To work in close design, by fraud or guile,
 What force effected not: that he no less
 At length from us may find, who overcomes
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.
 Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rife 650
 There went a fame in Heaven that he ere long
 Intended to create, and therein plant
 A generation, whom his choice regard
 Should favour equal to the sons of Heaven
 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps 655
 Our first eruption; thither or elsewhere:
 For this infernal pit shall never hold
 Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor the abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts
 Full counsel must mature. Peace is despair'd, 660

For who can think submission? War then, War
Open or understood must be resolved.

He spake : and, to confirm his words, out flew
Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
Of mighty Cherubim ; the sudden blaze 665
Far round illumined hell : Highly they rag'd
Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms
Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,
Hurling defiance toward the vault of heaven.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top 670
Belch'd fire and rolling smoke ; the rest entire
Shone with a glossy scurf ; undoubted sign
That in his womb was hid metallic ore,
The work of sulphur. Thithor, wing'd with speed,
A numerous brigade hasten'd : as when bands 675
Of pioneers, with spade and pickaxe arm'd,
Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,
Or cast a rampart. Mammon led them on ,

Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell [thoughts
From Heaven ; for e'en in Heaven his looks and
Were always downward bent, admiring more 681
The riches of Heaven's pavement, trodden gold,
Than ought divine or holy else enjoy'd
In vision beatific : by him first

Men also, and by his suggestion taught, 685
Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands
Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth

For treasures, better hid. Soon had his crew
Open'd into the hill a spacious wound,
And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire 690
That riches grow in Hell ; that soil may best
Deserve the precious bane. And here let those,
Who boast in mortal things, and wondering tell
Of Babel, and the works of Memphian kings,
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame, 695

And strength, and art, are easily outdone
By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour,
What in an age they with incessant toil

And hands innumerable scarce perform.
 Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepared, 700
 That underneath had veins of liquid fire
 Sluic'd from the lake, a second multitude
 With wondrous art founded the massy ore,
 Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross:
 A third as soon had form'd within the ground 705
 A various mould, and from the boiling cells
 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook;
 As in an organ, from one blast of wind,
 To many a row of pipes the soundboard breathes.
 Anon, out of the earth, a fabric huge 710
 Rose like an exhalation, with the sound
 Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,
 Built like a temple, where pilasters round
 Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid
 With golden architrave; nor did there want 715
 Cornice or frieze, with bossy sculptures graven:
 The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,
 Nor great Alcairo, such magnificence
 Equal'd in all their glories, to enshrine
 Jehus or Sérapis, their Gods; or seat 720
 Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove
 In wealth and luxury. The ascending pile
 Stood fix'd her stately height; and straight the doors,
 Opening their brazen folds, discover, wide
 Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth 725
 And level pavement: from the arched roof
 Pendant by subtle magic, many a row
 Of starry lamps and blazen cressets, fed
 With Naphtha and Asphaltus, yielded light
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude 730
 Admiring enter'd; and the work some praise,
 And some the architect: his hand was known
 In Heaven by many a tower'd structure high,
 Where sceptred Angels held their residence,
 And sat as princes: whom the supreme King 735
 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,

Each in his hierarchy, the orders bright.
 Nor was his name unheard, or unadored,
 In ancient Greece; and in Ausonian land
 Men call'd him Mulciber; and how he fell 740
 From Heaven they fabled, thrown by angry Jove
 Sheer o'er the crystal battlements: from morn
 To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,
 A summer's day; and with the setting sun
 Dropp'd from the zenith like a falling star, 745
 On Lemnos the Ægean isle: thus they relate,
 Erring; for he with his rebellious rout
 Fell long before; nor aught avail'd him now
 To have built in Heaven high towers; nor did he scape
 By all his engines, but was headlong sent 750
 With his industrious crew to build in Hell.
 Meanwhile the winged heralds, by command
 Of sov'reign power, with awful ceremony
 And trumpet's sound, throughout the host proclaim
 A solemn council, forthwith to be held 755
 At Pandemonium; the high capital
 Of Satan and his peers: their summons call'd
 From every band and squared regiment
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon,
 With hundreds and with thousands, trooping came,
 Attended: all access was throng'd; the gates 761
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall
 (Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold
 Wont ride in arm'd and at the Soldan's chair
 Defied the best of Panim chivalry 765
 To mortal combat, or career with lance,
 Thick swarm'd both on the ground and in the air
 Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees
 In spring time, when the sun with Taurus rides,
 Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 770
 In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,
 The suburb of their strawbuilt citadel,
 New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer

Ausonian

Their state affairs. So thick the aery crowd 775
 Swarm'd and were straiten'd; till, the signal given
 Behold a wonder! They but now who seem'd
 In bigness to surpass Earth's giant sons,
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room
 Throng numberless, like that Pygmean race 760
 Beyond the Indian mount: or fairy olives,
 Whose midnight revels, by a forest side
 Or fountain, some belated peasant sees
 Or dreams he sees, while overhead the moon
 Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth 785
 Wheels her pale course; they, on their mirth and dance
 Intent, with jocund music charm his ear;
 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.
 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
 Reduced their shapes immense, and were at large, 790
 Though without number still, amidst the hall
 Of that infernal court. But far within,
 And in their own dimensions, like themselves,
 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim
 In close recess and secret conclave sat; 795
 A thousand Demi-gods on golden seats,
 Frequent and full. After short silence then,
 And summons read, the great consult began

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK II.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven; Some advise it, others dissuade: A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be created: Their doubt, who shall be sent on this difficult search; Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell gates; finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them: by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between Hell and Heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,
Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand
Showers on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,
Satan exalted sat, by merit raised 5
To that bad eminence: and, from despair
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
Beyond thus high: insatiate to pursue
Vain war with Heaven; and, by success, untaught,
His proud imaginations thus display'd. 10
Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven!
For since no deep within her gulf can hold
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fallen,
I give not Heaven for lost. From this descent
Celestial virtues rising will appear 15
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.
Me though just right and the fix'd laws of Heaven
Did first create your Leader; next, free choice,
With what besides, in counsel or in fight, 20
Hath been achiev'd of merit; yet this loss,

Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In heaven, which follows dignity, might draw 25
 Envy from each inferior ; but who here
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim,
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 Of endless pain ? Where there is then no good 30
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there
 From faction ; for none sure will claim in Hell
 Precedence ; none, whose portion is so small
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
 Will covet more. With this advantage then 35
 To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,
 More than can be in Heaven, we now return
 To claim our just inheritance of old,
 Surer to prosper, than prosperity
 Could have assured us ; and, by what best way, 40
 Whether of open war, or covert guile,
 We now debate : Who can advise may speak.
 He ceased : and next to him Moloch, sceptred king,
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit
 That fought in Heaven, now fiercer by despair : 45
 His trust was with the Eternal to be deem'd
 Equal in strength ; and rather than be less
 Cared not to be at all ; with that care lost
 Went all his fear : of God, or Hell, or worse,
 He reck'd not ; and these words thereafter spake. 50
 My sentence is for open war : Of wiles,
 More unexpert, I boast not : them let those
 Contrive who need, or when they need ; not now,
 For, while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
 Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait 55
 The signal to ascend, sit lingering here
 Heaven's fugitives, and for their dwelling place
 Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,
 The prison of his tyranny who reigns

14486.18.33

PARADISE LOST.	27
By our delay? No! let us rather choose	60
Arm'd with Hell flames and fury, all at once,	
O'er Heaven's high towers to force resistless way,	
Turning our tortures into horrid arms	
Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise	
Of his Almighty engine he shall hear	65
Infernal thunder; and, for lightning, see	
Black fire and horror shot with equal rage	
Among his Angels; and his throne itself	
Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur and strange fire,	
His own invented torments. But perhaps	70
The way seems difficult and steep to scale	
With upright wing against a higher foe.	
Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench	
Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,	
That in our proper motion we ascend	75
Up to our native seat: Descent and fall	
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,	
When the fierce Foe hung on our broken rear	
Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,	
With what compulsion and laborious flight	80
We sunk thus low? The ascent is easy then;	
The event is fear'd; should we again provoke	
Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find	
To our destruction; if there be in Hell	
Fear to be worse destroy'd: What can be worse	85
That to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemn'd	
In this abhorred deep to utter woe;	
Where pain of unextinguishable fire	
Must exercise us without hope of end,	
The vassals of his anger, when the scourge	90
Inexorably, and the torturing hour	
Calls us to penance! More destroy'd than thus,	
We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.	
What fear we then? what doubt we to incense	
His utmost ire? which, to the height enraged,	95
Will either quite consume us, and reduce	
To nothing this essential; happier far	

Than miserable to have eternal being ·
 Or if our substance be indeed divine,
 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100
 On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel
 Our power sufficient to disturb his heaven,
 And with perpetual inroads to alarm,
 Though inaccessible, his fatal throne ·
 Which, if not victory, is yet revenge. 105
 He ended frowning, and his look denounced
 Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous
 To less than Gods. On the other side uprose
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane :
 A fairer person lost not Heaven ; he seem'd 110
 For dignity composed, and high exploit :
 But all was false and hollow ; though his tongue
 Dropp'd manna, and could make the worse appear
 The better reason, to perplex and dash
 Maturest counsels : for his thoughts were low 115
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds
 Timorous and slothful : yet he pleased the ear,
 And with persuasive accent thus began.
 I should be much for open war, O Peers,
 As not behind in hate ; if what was urged 120
 Main reason to persuade immediate war
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success ;
 When he, who most excels in fact of arms,
 In what he counsels, and in what excels, 125
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
 And utter dissolution, as the scope
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.
 First, what revenge ? The towers of Heaven are fill'd
 With armed watch, that render all access 130
 Impregnable : oft on the bordering deep
 Encamp their legions ; or, with obscure wing
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
 Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way
 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise 135

❖

PARADISE LOST.

With blackest insurrection, to confound
 Heaven's purest light ; yet our great Enemy,
 All incorruptible, would on his throne
 Sit unpolluted ; and the ethereal mould,
 Incapable of stain, would soon expel 140
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,
 Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope
 Is flat despair : We must exasperate
 The Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,
 And that must end us ; that must be our cure, 144
 To be no more. Sad cure ! for who would lose,
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
 Those thoughts that wander through eternity
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost
 In the wide womb of uncreated night,
 Devoid of sense and motion ? And who knows, 154
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe
 Can give it, or will ever ? how he can,
 Is doubtful ; that he never will, is sure.
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire, 155
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,
 To give his enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
 To punish endless ? Wherefore cease we then ?
 Say they who counsel war : we are decreed, 160
 Reserved, and destined to eternal woe ;
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
 What can we suffer worse ? Is this then worst,
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms ?
 What ! when we fled amain, pursued, and struck 165
 With Heaven's afflicting thunder, and besought
 The deep to shelter us ? This Hell then seem'd
 A refuge from those wounds ; or when we lay
 Chained on the burning lake ? That sure was worse.
 What if the breath, that kindled those grim fires, 170
 Awaked, should blow them into sevenfold rage,
 And plunge us in the flames ? or, from above,
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again

His red right hand to plague us? What if all
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament 175
 Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,
 Caught in a fiery tempest, shall be hurl'd 180
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey
 Of wracking whirlwinds; or for ever sunk
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapp'd in chains;
 There to converse with everlasting groans,
 Unrespited, unpitied, unreprieved, 185
 Ages of hopeless end? This would be worse.
 War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
 My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
 Views all things at one view? He from Heaven's height
 All these our motions vain sees and derides; 191
 Not more almighty to resist our might
 Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
 Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heaven
 Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here 195
 Chains and these torments? better these than worse,
 By my advice; since fate inevitable
 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,
 The Victor's will To suffer, as to do,
 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200
 That so ordains: This was at first resolved,
 If we were wise, against so great a Foe
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
 I laugh, when those who at the spear are bold
 And venturous, if that fail them, shrink and fear 205
 What yet they know must follow, to endure
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,
 The sentence of their Conqueror: This is now
 Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,
 Our Supreme Foe in time may much remit 210
 His anger; and perhaps, thus far removed

Not mind us not offending, satisfied
 With what is punish'd ; whence these raging fires
 Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.
 Our purer essence then will overcome 215
 Their noxious vapour ; or, inured, not feel ;
 Or changed at length, and to the place conform'd
 In temper and in nature, will receive
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ;
 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light ; 220
 Besides what hope the never ending flight
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
 Worth waiting ; since our present lot appears
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
 If we procure not to ourselves more woe. 225
 Thus Belial, with words clothed in reason's garb,
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,
 Not peace : And after him thus Mammon spake
 Either to disenthroned the King of Heaven
 We war, if war be best, or to regain 230
 Our own right lost : Him to unthroned we then
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield
 To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife :
 The former, vain to hope, argues as vain
 The latter : For what place can be for us 235
 Within Heaven's bound, unless Heaven's Lord supreme
 We overpower ? Suppose he should relent,
 And publish grace to all, on promise made
 Of new subjection ; with what eyes could we
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive 240
 Strict laws imposed, to celebrate his throne
 With warbled hymns and to his Godhead sing
 Forced Hallelujahs : while he lordly sits
 Our envied Sov'reign, and his altar breathes
 Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers, 245
 Our servile offerings ? This must be our task
 In Heaven, this our delight ; how wearisome
 Eternity so spent, in worship paid
 To whom we hate ! Let us not then presume

By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250
 Unacceptable, though in Heaven, our state
 On splendid vassalage ; but rather seek
 Our own good from ourselves, and from our own
 Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring 255
 Had liberty before the easy yoke
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,
 We can create ; and in what place so'er 260
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain,
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world
 Of darkness do we dread ? How oft amidst
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heaven's all-ruling Sire
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscured, 265
 And with the majesty of darkness round
 Covers his throne ; from whence deep thunders roar
 Mustering their rage, and Heaven resembles Hell ?
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light
 Imitate when we please ? This desert soil 270
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold ;
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence ; and what can Heaven show more ?
 Our torments also may in length of time
 Become our elements ; these piercing fires 275
 As soft as now severe, our temper changed
 Into their temper ; which must needs remove
 The sensible of pain. All things invite
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280
 Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are, and where ; dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war : Ye have what I advise.
 He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 The assembly as when hollow rocks retain 285
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long
 Had roused the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull

PARADISE LOST.

33

Seafaring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance,
 Or pinnace, anchors in a craggy bay
 After the tempest: Such applause was heard **A 290**
 As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleased,
 Advising peace: for such another field
 They dreaded worse than Hell: so much the fear
 Of thunder and the sword of Michael
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire **295**
 To found this nether empire, which might rise
 By policy, and long process of time,
 In emulation opposite to Heaven.
 Which when Beëlzebub perceived, than whom
 Satan except none higher sat, with grave **300**
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd
 A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven
 Deliberation sat, and public care;
 And princely counsel in his face yet shone,
 Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood **305**
 With Atlantean shoulders fit to bare
 The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look
 Drew audience and attention still as night
 Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spake.
 Thrones and Imperial Powers, Offspring of Heaven,
 Ethereal Virtues! or these titles now **311**
 Must we renounce, and, changing style, be call'd
 Princes of Hell! for so the popular vote
 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
 A growing empire; doubtless! while we dream, **315**
 And know not that the King of Heaven hath doom'd
 This place our dungeon; not our safe retreat
 Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt
 From Heaven's high jurisdiction, in new league
 Banded against his throne, but to remain **320**
 In strictest bondage, though thus far removed
 Under the inevitable curb, reserved
 His captive multitude: For he, be sure
 In height or depth, still first and last will reign
 Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part **325**

By our revolt; but over Hell extend
 His empire, and with iron sceptre rule
 Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.
 What sit we then projecting peace and war?
 War hath determined us, and foil'd with loss 330
 Irreparable; terms of peace yet none
 Vouchsafed or sought; for what peace will be given
 To us enslaved, but custody severe,
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment
 Inflicted? and what peace can we return, 335
 But to our power hostility and hate,
 Untamed reluctance, and revenge though slow
 Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice
 In doing what we most in suffering feel? 340
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dangerous expedition to invade
 Heaven, whose high walls fear no assault nor siege,
 Or ambush from the deep. What if we find
 Some easier enterprise? There is a place 345
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in Heaven
 Err not,) another world, the happy seat
 Of some new race call'd Man, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 In power and excellence, but favour'd more 350
 Of Him who rules above; so was his will
 Pronounced among the Gods, and by an oath,
 That shook Heaven's whole circumference, confirm'd.
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould, 355
 Or substance, how endued, and what their power,
 And where their weakness, how attempted best,
 By force or subtlety. Though Heaven be shut,
 And Heaven's high Arbitrator sit secure
 In his own strength, this place may lie exposed, 360
 The utmost border of his kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it: Here perhaps
 Some advantageous act may be achieved

PARADISE LOST.

By sudden onset ; either with Hell fire	35
To waste his whole creation, or possess	365
All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,	
The puny habitants ; or, if not drive,	
Seduce them to our party, that their God	
May prove their foe, and with repenting hand	
Abolish his own works. This would surpass	379
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy	
In our confusion, and our joy upraise	
In his disturbance ; when his darling sons,	
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse	
Their frail original, and faded bliss,	375
Faded so soon. Advise, if this be worth	
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here	
Hatching vain empires. Thus Beelzebub	
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devised	
By Satan, and in part proposed : For whence,	380
But from the author of all ill, could spring	
So deep a malice, to confound the race	
Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell	
To mingle and involve, done all to spite	
The great Creator ? But their spite still serves	385
His glory to augment. The bold design	
Pleased highly those infernal States, and joy	
Sparkled in all their eyes ; with full assent	
They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews .	
Well have ye judged, well ended long debate,	390
Synod of Gods ! and, like to what ye are,	
Great things resolved, which, from the lowest deep,	
Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,	
Nearer our ancient seat ; perhaps in view	[arms
Of those bright confines, whence, with neighbouring	
And opportune excursion, we may chance	396
Reenter Heaven ; or else in some mild zone	
Dwell, not unvisited of Heaven's fair light,	
Secure ; and at the brightening orient beam	
Purge off this gloom : the soft delicious air,	400
To heal the scar of these corrosive fires.	

Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send
 In search of this new world? whom shall we find
 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandering feet
 The dark unbottom'd infinite abyss, 405

And through the palpable obscure find out
 His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight
 Upborne with indefatigable wings
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
 The happy isle? What strength, what art can then
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe 411
 Through the strict senteries and stations thick
 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need
 All circumspection; and we now no less
 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send, 415
 The weight of all, and our last hope, relies.

This said he sat; and expectation held
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd
 To second, or oppose, or undertake
 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute, 420
 Pondering the danger with deep thought; and each
 In other's countenance read his own dismay,
 Astonish'd: None among the choice and prime
 Of those heaven-warring champions could be found
 So hardy as to proffer or accept, 425
 Alone, the dreadful voyage; till at last
 Satan, whom now transcendent glory raised
 Above his fellows, with monarchal pride,
 Conscious of highest worth, unmoved thus spake:

O Progeny of Heaven, empyreal Thrones! 430
 With reason hath deep silence and demur
 Seized us, though undismay'd: Long is the way
 And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light;
 Our prison strong; this huge convex of fire,
 Outrageous to devour, immures us round 435
 Ninofold; and gates of burning adamant,
 Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.
 These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound
 Of unessential Night receives him next

PARADISE LOST.

37

Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440
 Threatens him, plunged in that abortive gulf.
 If thence ne scape into whatever world,
 Or unknown region, what remains him less
 Than unknown dangers and as hard escape ?
 But I should ill become this throne, O Peers, 445
 And this imperial sov'reignty, adorn'd
 With splendour, arm'd with power, if aught proposed
 And judg'd of public moment, in the shape
 Of difficulty or danger could deter
 Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450
 These royalties, and not refuse to reign,
 Refusing to accept as great a share
 Of hazard as of honour, due alike
 To him who reigns, and so much to him due
 Of hazard more, as he above the rest 455
 High honour'd sits ? Go, therefore, mighty Powers,
 Terror of Heaven, though fallen ! intend at home,
 While here shall be our home, what best may ease
 The present misery, and render Hell
 More tolerable ; if there be cure or charm 460
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill magsion : interm't no watch
 Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliverance for us all : This enterprise 465
 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
 The Monarch, and prevented all reply ;
 Prudent, lest, from his resolution raised,
 Others among the chief might offer now
 (Certain to be refused) what erst they fear'd ; 470
 And, so refused, might in opinion stand
 His rivals ; winning cheap the high repute
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more the adventure than his voice
 Ferbidding ; and at once with him they rose : 475
 Their rising all at once was as the sound
 Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend

PARADISE LOST.

B. II.

With equal reverence prone ; and as a God
 Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven :
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they praise. 490
 That for the general safety he despised
 His own : For neither do the Spirits damn'd
 Lose all their virtue ; lest bad men should boast
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites
 Or close ambition, varnish'd o'er with zeal. 495
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief :
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds
 Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread
 Heaven's cheerful face, the lowering element 490
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landscape snow or shower ;
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet
 Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley ring. 495
 O shame to men ! Devil with Devil damn'd
 Firm concord holds ; men only disagree
 Of creatures rational, though under hope
 Of heavenly grace : and, God proclaiming peace,
 Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife 500
 Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,
 Wasting the earth, each other to destroy ;
 As if (which might induce us to accord)
 Man had not hellish foes enow besides,
 That, day and night, for his destruction wait. 505
 The Stygian council thus dissolved ; and forth
 In order came the grand infernal Peers :
 Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seem'd
 Alone the Antagonist of Heaven, nor less
 Than Hell's dread Emperor, with pomp supreme 510
 And Godlike imitated state : him round
 A globe of fiery Seraphim enclosed
 With bright emblazonry and horrent arms.
 Then of their session ended they bid cry
 With trumpets' regal sound the great result : 515

PARADISE LOST.

39

Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim
 Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,
 By herald's voice explain'd ; the hollow abyss
 Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell
 With deafening shout return'd them loud acclaim. 520
 Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat raised
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Powers
 Disband ; and, wandering, each his several way
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
 Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find 525
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain
 The irksome hours till his great Chief return.
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,
 As at the Olympian games or Pythian fields ; 530
 Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal
 With rapid wheels, or fronted brigades form.
 As when, to warn proud cities, war appears
 Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush
 To battle in the clouds, before each van 535
 Prick forth the aery knights, and couch their spears
 Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms
 From either end of Heaven the welkin burns.
 Others, with vast Typhcean rage more fell,
 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540
 In whirlwind ; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.
 As when Alcides, from Cæthalia crown'd
 With conquest, felt the evenom'd robe, and tore
 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines ;
 And Lichas from the top of Cæta threw 545
 Into the Euboic sea. Others more mild,
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing
 With notes angelical to many a harp
 Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall
 By doom of battle ; and complain that fate 550
 Free virtue should enthrall to force or chance.
 Their song was partial ; but the harmony
 (What could it less when spirits immortal sing ?)

Suspended, Hell, and took with ravishment
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,) 556
 Others apart sat on a hill retired,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate ;
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute ; 560
 And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.
 Of good and evil much they argued then.
 Of happiness and final misery,
 Passion and apathy, and glory and shame ;
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy ! 565
 Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm
 Pain for a while or anguish, and exite
 Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast.
 With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers that disgorge 575
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;
 Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep ;
 Cocytus, named of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,
 Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls
 Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets ; 585
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590
 Of ancient pile ; or else deep snow and ice,

A gulf profound, as that Serbonian bog
 Betwixt Damiatra and mount Casius old,
 Where armies whole have sunk : The parching air
 Burns frore, and cold performs the effect of fire. 595
 Thither by harpy-footed furies haled,
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire, to starve in ice 600
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infix'd, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this Lethean sound
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so near the brink ;
 But fate withstands, and to oppose the attempt 610
 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards
 The ford, and of itself the water flies
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on
 In confused march forlorn, the adventurous bands, 615
 With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest : through many a dark and dreary vale
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
 A universe of death : which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good ;
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, (25
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceives
 Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.

Meanwhile the adversary of God and Man

Satan, with thoughts inflamed of highest design, 630
 Puts on swift wings, and towards the gates of Hell
 Explores his solitary flight : sometimes
 He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left ;
 Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars
 Up to the fiery concave towering high. 635
 As when far off at sea a fleet descried
 Hangs on the clouds, by equinoctial winds
 Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles
 Of Ternate and Tidore, whence merchants bring
 Their spicy drugs ; they, on the trading flood, 640
 Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape,
 Ply stemming nightly toward the pole : so seem'd
 Far off the flying Fiend. At last appear
 Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,
 And thrice threefold the gates ; three folds were brass,
 Three iron, three of adamantine rock 646
 Impenetrable, impaled with circling fire,
 Yet unconsumed. Before the gates there sat,
 On either side a formidable shape :
 The one seem'd woman to the waist, and fair ; 650
 But ended foul in many a scaly fold
 Voluminous and vast ; a serpent arm'd
 With mortal sting : About her middle round
 A cry of Hellhounds never ceasing bark'd
 With wide Cerberian mouths full loud, and rung 655
 A hideous peal ; yet, when they list, would creep,
 If aught disturb'd their noise, into her womb,
 And kennel there ; yet there still bark'd and howl'd,
 Within, unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these
 Vex'd Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts 660
 Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shere ;
 Nor uglier follow the night hag, when, call'd
 In secret, riding through the air she comes,
 Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance
 With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon 665
 Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none

Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb ;
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 For each seem'd either ; black it stood as Night, 670
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,
 And shook a dreadful dart ; what seem'd his head
 The likeness of a kingly crown had on.
 Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 The monster moving onward came as fast 675
 With horrid strides ; Hell trembled as he strode.
 The undaunted Fiend what this might be admired ;
 Admired, not fear'd ; God and his Son except,
 Created thing nought valued he, nor shunn'd ;
 And with disdainful look thus first began : 680
 Whence and what art thou, execrable shape !
 That darest, though grim and terrible, advance
 Thy miscreated front athwart my way.
 To yonder gates ? through them I mean to pass,
 That be assured, without leave ask'd of thee : 685
 Retire or taste thy folly ; and learn by proof,
 Hell-born ! not to contend with Spirits of heaven.
 To whom the Goblin full of wrath replied :
 Art thou that Traitor-Angel, art thou He
 Who first broke peace in Heaven, and faith, till then
 Unbroken ; and in proud rebellious arms 691
 Drew after him the third part of Heaven's sons
 Conjured against the Highest ; for which both thou
 And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd
 To waste eternal days in woe and pain ? 695
 And reckon'st thou thyself with Spirits of Heaven,
 Hell-doom'd ! and breathest defiance here and scorn,
 Where I reign king ; and, to enrage thee more,
 Thy king and lord ? Back to thy punishment,
 False fugitive ! and to thy speed add wings ; 700
 Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue
 Thy lingering ; or with one stroke of this dart
 Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.
 So spake the grisly Terror, and in shape,
 So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold 705

More dreadful and deform. On the other side,
 Incens'd with indignation, Satan stood
 Unterrified ; and like a comet burn'd,
 That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge
 In the arctic sky, and from his horrid hair 710
 Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head
 Level'd his deadly aim ; their fatal hands
 No second stroke intend ; and such a frown
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds,
 With Heaven's artillery fraught, come rattling on 715
 Over the Caspian ; then stand front to front,
 Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow
 To join their dark encounter in mid air :
 So frown'd the mighty combatants that Hell
 Grew darker at their frown : so match'd they stood ;
 For never but once more was either like 721
 To meet so great a foe : And now great deeds
 Had been achieved, whereof all Hell had rung,
 Had not the snaky Sorceress that sat
 Fast by Hell-gate, and kept the fatal key, 725
 Risen, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.
 O Father ! what intends thy hand, she cried,
 Against thy only Son ? What fury, O Son !
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart
 Against thy father's head ? and know'st for whom ;
 For him who sits above, and laughs the while 731
 At thee ordain'd his drudge ; to execute
 Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids ?
 His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both !
 She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest 735
 Forbore ; then these to her Satan return'd :
 So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,
 Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends ; till first I know of thee 740
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd ; and why,
 In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st
 Me Father, and that phantasm call'st my Son !

PARADISE LOST.

43

I know thee not, nor ever saw till now
 Sight more detestable than him and thee. 745
 To whom thus the Portress of Hell-gate replied
 Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem
 Now in thine eye so foul? once deem'd so fair
 In Heaven, when at the assembly, and in sight
 Of all the Seraphim with thee combined 750
 In bold conspiracy against Heaven's King,
 All on a sudden miserable pain
 Surprised thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swam
 In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast
 Threw forth; till, on the left side opening wide, 755
 Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright
 Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess arm'd,
 Out of thy head I sprang; Amazement seized
 All the host of Heaven; back they recoil'd afraid
 At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a sign 760
 Portentous held me; but, familiar grown,
 I pleased, and with attractive graces won
 The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft
 Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing
 Became enamour'd; and such joy thou took'st 765
 With me in secret that my womb conceived
 A growing burden. Meanwhile war arose,
 And fields were fought in Heaven; Wherein remain'd
 (For what could else?) to our Almighty Foe
 Clear victory; to our part loss and rout, 770
 Through all the empyréan; down they fell
 Driven headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down
 Into this deep; and in the general fall
 I also; at which time, this powerful key
 Into my hand was given, with charge to keep 775
 These gates for ever shut, which none can pass
 Without my opening. Pensive here I sat
 Alone; but long I sat not, till my womb
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,
 Prodigious motion felt, and rueful throes. 780
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,

Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
 Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 Transform'd : But he my inbred enemy 785
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart
 Made to destroy ! I fled, and cried out *Death!*
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd
 From all her caves, and back resounded *Death!*
 I fled ; but he pursued (though more, it seems, 790
 Inflamed with lust than rage,) and, swifter far,
 Me overtook, his mother, all dismay'd ;
 And, in embraces forcible and foul
 Ingendering with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling monsters that with ceaseless cry 795
 Surround me, as thou saw'st : hourly conceived
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
 To me ; for, when they list, into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw
 My bowels, their repast ; then bursting forth 800
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find.
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim Death, my son and foe ; who sets them on,
 And me his parent would full soon devour 805
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involved ; and knows that I
 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,
 Whenever that shall be ; so Fate pronounced.
 But thou, O Father ! I forewarn thee, shun 810
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,
 Though temper'd heavenly ; for that mortal dint,
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.
 She finish'd ; and the subtle Fiend his lore 815
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth
 Dear Daughter ! since thou claim'st me for thy sire
 And my fair son here show'st me, (the dear pledge
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys

Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change
 Befallen us, unforeseen, unthought of) know, 821
 I come no enemy, but to set free

From out this dark and dismal house of pain
 Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host
 Of Spirits, that, in our just pretences arm'd, 825

Fell with us from on high: From them I go
 This uncouth errand sole; and one for all
 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread
 The unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 To search with wandering quest a place foretold 834

Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss
 In the purlieu of Heaven, and therein placed
 A race of upstart creatures, to supply

Perhaps our vacant room; though more removed, 834
 Lest Heaven, surcharged with potent multitude,
 Might hap to move new broils. Be this or aught

Than this more secret now design'd, I haste
 To know; and, this once known, shall soon return,
 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death 844
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
 Wing silently the buxom air, embalm'd
 With odours; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceased, for both seem'd highly pleased; and Death
 Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 846
 His famine should be fill'd; and bless'd his maw
 Destined to that good hour: No less rejoiced
 His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire.

The key of this infernal pit by due, 850
 And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King,
 I keep; by him forbidden to unlock
 These adamant gates against all force
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,
 Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might. 855

But what owe I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down

Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
 Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 Transform'd : But he my inbred enemy 785
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart
 Made to destroy ! I fled, and cried out *Death !*
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd
 From all her caves, and back resounded *Death !*
 I fled ; but he pursued (though more, it seems, 790
 Inflamed with lust than rage,) and, swifter far,
 Me overtook, his mother, all dismay'd ;
 And, in embraces forcible and foul
 Ingendering with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling monsters that with ceaseless cry 795
 Surround me, as thou saw'st : hourly conceived
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
 To me ; for, when they list, into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw
 My bowels, their repast ; then bursting forth 800
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find.
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim Death, my son and foe ; who sets them on,
 And me his parent would full soon devour 805
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involved ; and knows that I
 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,
 Whenever that shall be ; so Fate pronounced.
 But thou, O Father ! I forewarn thee, shun 810
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,
 Though temper'd heavenly ; for that mortal dint,
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.
 She finish'd ; and the subtle Fiend his lore 815
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth
 Dear Daughter ! since thou claim'st me for thy sire
 And my fair son here show'st me, (the dear pledge
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys

Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change
 Befallen us, unforeseen, unthought of) know, 821
 I come no enemy, but to set free

From out this dark and dismal house of pain
 Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host
 Of Spirits, that, in our just pretences arm'd, 825

Fell with us from on high: From them I go
 This uncouth errand sole; and one for all
 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread
 The unfounded deep, and through the void immense
 To search with wandering quest a place foretold 830

Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss
 In the purlieu of Heaven, and therein placed
 A race of upstart creatures, to supply

Perhaps our vacant room; though more removed, 835
 Lest Heaven, surcharged with potent multitude,
 Might hap to move new broils. Be this or aught
 Than this more secret now design'd, I haste

To know; and, this once known, shall soon return,
 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death 840
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
 Wing silently the buxom air, embalm'd
 With odours; there ye shall be fed and fill'd
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceased, for both seem'd highly pleased; and Death
 Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear 845
 His famine should be fill'd; and bless'd his maw
 Destined to that good hour: No less rejoiced
 His mother bad, and thus bespcke her sire

The key of this infernal pit by due, 850
 And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King,
 I keep; by him forbidden to unlock

These adamantine gates; against all force
 Death ready stands to interposo his dart,
 Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might. 855

Rut what owe I to his commands above
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down

Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,
 To sit in hateful office here confined,
 Inhabitant of Heaven, and heavenly born, 860
 Here in perpetual agony and pain,
 With terrors and with clamours compass'd round
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?
 Thou art my father, thou my author, thou
 My being gavest me; whom should I obey 865
 But thee? whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon
 To that new world of light and bliss, among
 The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign.
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems
 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end. 870
 Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;
 And, toward the gate rolling her bestial train,
 Forthwith the huge portcullis high updrew,
 Which but herself, not all the Stygian Powers 875
 Could once have moved; then in the keyhole turns
 The intricate wards, and every bolt and bar
 Of massy iron or solid rock with ease
 Unfastens: On a sudden open fly
 With impetuous recoil and jaring sound 880
 The infernal doors, and on their hinges grate
 Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut
 Excell'd her power; the gates wide open stood,
 That with extended wings a banner'd host, 885
 Under spread ensigns, marching, might pass through
 With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array
 So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth
 Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.
 Before their eyes in sudden view appear 890
 The secrets of the hoary deep; a dark
 Illimitable ocean, without bound,
 Without dimension; where length, breadth, and height,
 And time, and place are lost; where eldest Night
 And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold 895

PARADISE LOST

49

Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise
 Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,
 Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring
 Their embryon atoms ; they around the flag 900
 Of each his faction, in their several clans,
 Light arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the sands
 Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,
 Levied to side with warring winds, and poise 905
 Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,
 He rules a moment : Chaos umpire sits,
 And by decision more embroils the fray,
 By which he reigns: Next him, high arbiter,
 Chance governs all. Into this wild abyss, 910
 The womb of Nature and perhaps her grave,
 Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd
 Confusedly, and which thus must ever fight,
 Unless the Almighty Maker them ordain 915
 His dark materials to create more worlds ;
 Into this wild abyss the wary Fiend
 Stood on the brink of Hell, and look'd awhile,
 Pondering his voyage ; for no narrow frith
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd 920
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare
 Great things with small) than when Bellona storms,
 With all her battering engines bent to rase
 Some capital city ; or less than if this frame
 Of Heaven were falling, and these elements 925
 In mutiny had from her axle torn
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke
 Uplifted spurns the ground ; thence many a league,
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides 930
 Audacious ; but, that seat soon failing, meets
 A vast vacuity : all unawares
 Fluttering his pennons vain, plumb down he drops

Suspended, Hell, and took with ravishment
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,) 556
 Others apart sat on a hill retired,
 In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate ;
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute ; 560
 And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.
 Of good and evil much they argued then.
 Of happiness and final misery,
 Passion and apathy, and glory and shame ;
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy ! 565
 Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm
 Pain for a while or anguish, and exite
 Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast
 With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers that disgorge 575
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;
 Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep ;
 Cocytus, named of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,
 Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls
 Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets ; 585
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590
 Of ancient pile ; or else deep snow and ice,

A gulf profound, as that Serbonian bog
 Betwixt Damiatra and mount Casius old,
 Where armies whole have sunk : The parching air
 Burns frore, and cold performs the effect of fire. 595
 Thither by harpy-footed furies haled,
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire, to starve in ice 600
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infix'd, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this Lethean sound
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so near the brink ;
 But fate withstands, and to oppose the attempt 610
 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards
 The ford, and of itself the water flies
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on
 In confused march forlorn, the adventurous bands, 615
 With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest : through many a dark and dreary vale
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
 A universe of death : which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good ;
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, (25
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceives
 Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.

Meanwhile the adversary of God and Man

Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
 (For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,) 556
 Others apart sat on a hill retired,
 In thoughts more elevatèd, and reason'd high
 Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate ;
 Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute ; 560
 And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.
 Of good and evil much they argued then.
 Of happiness and final misery,
 Passion and apathy, and glory and shame ;
 Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy ! 565
 Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm
 Pain for a while or anguish, and exite
 Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast
 With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.
 Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570
 On bold adventure to discover wide
 That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
 Might yield them easier habitation, bend
 Four ways their flying march, along the banks
 Of four infernal rivers that disgorge 575
 Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;
 Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep ;
 Cocytus, named of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,
 Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls
 Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets, 585
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590
 Of ancient pile ; or else deep snow and ice,

A gulf profound, as that Serbonian bog
 Betwixt Damiatra and mount Casius old,
 Where armies whole have sunk : The parching air
 Burns frore, and cold performs the effect of fire. 595
 Thither by harpy-footed furies haled,
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire, to starve in ice 600
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immovable, infix'd, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 They ferry over this Lethean sound
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment, 605
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
 All in one moment, and so near the brink ;
 But fate withstands, and to oppose the attempt 610
 Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards
 The ford, and of itself the water flies
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on
 In confused march forlorn, the adventurous bands, 615
 With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest : through many a dark and dreary vale
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
 A universe of death : which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good ;
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things, (625
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceives
 Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.
 Meanwhile the adversary of God and Man

PARADISE LOST

BOOK III.

God, sitting on his throne, sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shows him to the Son, who sat at his right hand; foretels the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man: But God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine justice: Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and, therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for Man: The Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him: They obey, and hymning to their harps in full choir, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb; where wandering he first finds a place, since called the Limbo of Vanity: What persons and things fly up thither: Thence comes to the gate of Heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it: His passage thence to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uriel, the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel; and, pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and Man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed: Alights first on mount Niphates.

LAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven first-born,
Or of the Eternal coeternal beam,
May I express thee unblamed? since God is light,
And never but in unapproach'd light
Dwelt from eternity; dwelt then in thee, 5
Bright effluence of bright essence increate!
Or hear'st thou rather, pure ethereal stream,
Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,
Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice
Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest 10
The rising world of waters dark and deep
Won from the void and formless infinite.

PARADISE LOST.

	86
Thee I revisit now with bolder wing, Escaped the Stygian pool, though long detain'd	15
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight Through utter and through middle darkness borne, With other notes than to the Orphéan lyre, I sung of Chaos and eternal Night ; Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down The dark descent, and up to reascend,	20
Though hard and rare : thee I revisit safe, And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp ; but thou Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ; So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs, Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill, Smit with the love of sacred song ; but chief Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath, That wash'd thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow, Nightly I visit : nor sometimes forget Those other two equal'd with me in fate, So were I equal'd with them in renown !	25
Blind Thamyris, and blind Mæonides ; And Tiresias, and Phineus, prophets old :	30
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year Seasons return : but not to me returns	35
Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn, Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose, Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ; But cloud instead, and everduring dark Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair Presented with a universal blank Of natures works, to me expunged and ras'd, And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.	40 45 50

So much the rather thou, celestial Light,
 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
 Irradiate ; there plant eyes, all mist from thence
 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell
 Of things invisible to mortal sight. 55

Now had the Almighty Father from above,
 From the pure empyrean where he sits
 High throned above all height, bent down his eye
 His own works and their works at once to view :
 About him all the Sanctities of Heaven. 60

Stood thick as stars, and from his sight received
 Beatitude past utterance : on his right
 The radiant image of his glory sat,
 His only Son ; on earth he first beheld
 Our two first parents, yet the only two 65

Of mankind in the happy garden placed,
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
 Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love,
 In blissful solitude ; he then survey'd
 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there 70

Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night
 In the dun air sublime, and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet,
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd
 Firm land Ambosom'd, without firmament, 75

Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake :

Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage
~~Transport~~ transports our Adversary ? whom no bounds
 Prescribed, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss,
 Wide interrupt, can hold ; so bent he seems
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound 85
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now,
 Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way
 Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,

PARADISE LOST.

57

Directly towards the new created world,
 And man there placed, with purpose to essay 90
 If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,
 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert;
 For man will hearken to his glossing lies,
 And easily transgress the sole command,
 Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall 95
 He and his faithless progeny: Whose fault?
 Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
 All he could have; I made him just and right,
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
 Such I created all the ethereal Powers 100
 And Spirits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd;
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.
 Not free, what proof could they have given sincere
 Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,
 Where only what they needs must do appear'd, 105
 Not what they would? what praise could they receive?
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
 When will and reason (reason also is choice)
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,
 Made passive both, had served necessity, 110
 Not me? They therefore, as to right belong'd,
 So were created, nor can justly accuse
 Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,
 As if predestination overruled
 Their will disposed by absolute decree 115
 Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed
 Their own revolt, not I; if I foreknew,
 Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.
 So without least impulse or shadow of fate, 120
 Or aught by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, authors to themselves in all
 Both what they judge and what they choose; for so
 I form'd them free; and free they must remain,
 Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change 125
 Their nature, and revoke the high decree

Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom ; ~~they themselves~~ ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by ~~their own~~ suggestion fell,
 Self-tempted, self-depraved : Man falls, deceived 130
 By the other first : Man therefore shall find grace,
 The other none : In mercy and justice both,
 Through Heaven and Earth, so shall my glory excel ;
 But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd 135
 All Heaven, and in the blessed Spirits elect
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffused.

Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
 Most glorious ; in him all his father shone
 Substantially express'd ; and in his face 140
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,
 Love without end, and without measure grace ;
 Which, uttering, thus he to his Father spake :

O Father, gracious was that word which closed 144
 Thy sov'reign sentence, that man should find grace ;
 For which both Heaven and Earth shall high extol
 Thy praises, with the innumerable sound
 Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever bless'd.

For should Man finally be lost ? should Man, 150
 Thy creature late so loved, thy youngest son,
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
 With his own folly ? That be from thee far,
 That far be from thee, Father, who art judge
 Of all things made, and judgest only right. 155

Or shall the Adversary thus obtain
 His end, and frustrate thine ? shall he fulfil
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought ;
 Or proud return, though to his heavier doom, 160
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,
 By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thyself
 Abolish thy creation, and unmake
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made ?

PARADISE LOST.

59

So should thy goodness and thy greatness both 165
 Be question'd and blasphemed without defence.

To whom the great Creator thus replied :

O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone 170
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,

All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all
 As my eternal purpose hath decreed ;

Man shall not quite be lost, but saved who will ;
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me

Freely vouchsafed ; once more I will renew 175
 His lapsed powers, though forfeit, and enthrall'd

By sin to foul exorbitant desires ;
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand

On even ground against his mortal foe ;
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180

His fallen condition is, and to me owe
 All his deliverance, and to none but me.

Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,
 Elect above the rest ; so is my will :

The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd 185
 Their sinful state, and to appease betimes

The incensed Deity, while offer'd grace
 Invites ; for I will clear their senses dark,

What may suffice, and soften stony hearts 190
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.

To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,
 Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,

Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.
 And I will place within them as a guide,

My umpire Conscience ; whom if they will hear, 195
 Light after light, well used, they shall attain,

And to the end, persisting safe arrive.

✧ This my long sufferance, and my day of grace,
 They who neglect and scorn shall never taste ;

But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 200
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall ;

And none but such from mercy I exclude.

But yet all is not done ; Man disobeying,
 Disloyal, breaks his fealty, and sins
 Against the high supremacy of Heaven, 205
 Affecting Godhead ; and, so losing all,
 To expiate his treason hath nought left,
 But to destruction sacred and devout,
 He with his whole posterity must die ;
 Die he or justice must : unless for him 210
 Some other able, and as willing, pay
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.
 Say, heavenly Powers, where shall we find such love ?
 Which of ye will be mortal, to redeem
 Man's mortal crime, and just the unjust to save ? 215
 Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear ?
 He ask'd, but all the heavenly choir stood mute,
 And silence was in Heaven : On Man's behalf
 Patron or intercessor none appear'd,
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220
 The deadly forfeiture and ransom set.
 And now without redemption all mankind
 Must have been lost, adjudged to Death and Hell
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine, 225
 His dearest mediation thus renew'd :
 Father, thy word is pass'd, Man shall find grace ;
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all
 Comes unprevented, unimplored, unsought ?
 Happy for Man, so coming : he her aid
 Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost ;
 Atonement for himself, or offering meet,
 Indebted and undone, hath none to bring ; 235
 Behold me then : me for him, life for life
 I offer ; on me let thine anger fall ;
 Account me Man. I for his sake will leave
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die

Well pleased ; on me let Death wreak all his rage ;
 Under his gloomy power I shall not long
 Lie vanquish'd ; thou hast given me to possess
 Life in myself for ever ; by thee I live,
 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due 245
 All that of me can die ; yet, that debt paid,
 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul
 For ever with corruption there to dwell ;
 But I shall rise victorious, and subdued 250
 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil ;
 Death his death's wound then shall receive, and stoop
 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.
 I through the ample air in triumph high
 Shall lead Hell captive, maugre Hell, and show 255
 The Powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight
 Pleased, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile ;
 While, by thee raised, I ruin all my foes,
 Death last, and with his carcass glut the grave :
 Then, with the multitude of my redeem'd, 260
 Shall enter Heaven, long absent, and return,
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assured
 And reconcilement ; wrath shall be no more
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire. 265
 His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breathed immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shone
 Filial obedience : As a sacrifice
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270
 Of his great Father. Admiration seized
 All Heaven, what this might mean, and whither tend,
 Wondering ; but soon the Almighty thus replied :
 O thou in Heaven and Earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath ! O thou 275
 My sole complacence ! well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least,
 Though last created ; that for him I spare

Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By loosing thee a while, the whole race lost. 280
 Thou, therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,
 Their nature also to thy nature join ;
 And be thyself Man among men on earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth : Be thou in Adam's room 285
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,
 As from a second root, shall be restored
 As many as are restored, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit, 290
 Imputed, shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for Man, be judged and die, 295
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise
 His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.
 So heavenly love shall outdo hellish hate, 300
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem ;
 So dearly to redeem what hellish hate 305
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.
 Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.
 Because thou hast, though throned in highest bliss 310
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying
 Godlike fruition, quitted all, to save
 A world from utter loss, and hast been found
 By merit more than birthright Son of God,
 Found worthiest to be so by being good, 315
 Far more than great or high ; because in thee
 Love hath abounded more than glory abounds ;
 Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt
 With thee thy manhood also to this throne :
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign 320
 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,

PARADISE LOST.

63

Anointed universal king ; all power
 I give thee ; reign for ever, and assume
 Thy merits ; under thee, as head supreme,
 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions I reduce :
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide **321**
 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.
 When thou, attended gloriously from Heaven,
 Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send
 The summoning Archangels to proclaim **325**
 Thy dread tribunal ; forthwith from all winds,
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead
 Of all past ages, to the general doom
 Shall hasten ; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.
 Then, all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge **330**
 Bad Men and Angels ; they, arraign'd, shall sink
 Beneath thy sentence ; Hell, her numbers full,
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile
 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring
 New Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,
 And, after all their tribulations long, **336**
 See golden days fruitful of golden deeds,
 With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.
 Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,
 For regal sceptre then no more shall need, **340**
 God shall be all in all. But, all ye Gods,
 Adore him, who to compass all this dies ;
 Adore the Son, and honour him as me.
 No sooner had the Almighty ceased, but all
 The multitude of Angels, with a shout **345**
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet
 As from bless'd voices, uttering joy, Heaven rung
 With jubilee, and loud Hosannas fill'd
 The eternal regions : Lowly reverent
 Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground
 With solemn adoration down they cast **351**
 Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold ;
 Immortal amarant, a flower which once
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life,

Began to bloom ; but soon for man's offence 355
 To Heaven removed, where first it grew, there grows ;
 And flowers aloft shading the fount of life,
 And where the river of bliss through midst of Heaven
 Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream ;
 With these that never fade the Spirits elect 360
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams ;
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,
 Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.
 Then, crown'd again, their golden harps they took, 365
 Harps ever tuned, that glittering by their side
 Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet
 Of charming symphony they introduce
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join 370
 Melodious part, such concord is in Heaven.
 Thee, Father, first they sung Omnipotent,
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,
 Eternal King ; the Author of all being,
 Fountain of light, thyself invisible 375
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st
 Throned inaccessible, but when thou shad'st
 The full blaze of thy beams, and, through a cloud
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,
 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear ; 380
 Yet dazzle Heaven, that brightest Seraphim
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
 Thee next they sang of all creation first,
 Begotten Son, Divins Similitude,
 In whose conspicuous countenanco, without cloud 385
 Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,
 Whom else no creature can behold ; on thee
 Impress'd the effulgence of his glory abides,
 Transfused on thee his ample Spirit rests.
 He Heaven of Heavens and all the Powers therein
 By thee created ; and by thee threw down 391
 The aspiring Dominations · Thou that day

PARADISE LOST.

65

Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,
 Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook
 Heaven's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks 395
 Thou drovest of warring Angels disarray'd.
 Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaim
 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
 Not so on Man : Him through their malice fallen, 400
 Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom
 So strictly, but much more to pity incline :
 No sooner did thy dear and only Son
 Perceive thee purposed not to doom frail Man
 So strictly, but much more to pity inclined, 405
 He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife
 Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,
 Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat
 Second to thee, offer'd himself to die
 For Man's offence. O unexampled love, 410
 Love no where to be found less than Divine !
 Hail, Son of God, Saviour of Men ! Thy name
 Shall be the copious matter of my song
 Henceforth, and never shall my heart thy praise
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin. 415

Thus they in Heaven, above the starry sphere,
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.
 Meanwhile upon the firm opacous globe
 O' this round world, whose first convex divides 420
 The luminous inferior orbs, enclosed
 From Chaos and the inroad of Darkness old,
 Satan alighted walks : a globe far off
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
 Starless exposed, and ever threatening storms 425
 Of Chaos blustering round, inclement sky ;
 Save on that side which from the wall of Heaven,
 Though distant far, some small reflection gains
 Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud :
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field. 430

As when a vulture on Imaus bred,
 Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,
 Dislodging from a region scarce of prey
 To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanning kids,
 On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs
 Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams; 436
 But in his way ligh's on the barren plains
 Of Sericana, where Chinese drive
 With sails and wind their cany waggons light :
 So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend 440
 Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey ;
 Alone, for other creature in this place,
 Living or lifeless, to be found was none ;
 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth
 Up hither like aerial vapours flew 445
 Of all things transitory and vain, when sin
 With vanity had fill'd the works of men :
 Both all things vain, and all who on vain things
 Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,
 Or happiness in this or the other life ; 450
 All who have their reward on earth, the fruits
 Of painful superstition and blind zeal,
 Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find
 Fit retribution, empty as their deeds ;
 All the unaccomplish'd works of Nature's hand, 455
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,
 Dissolved on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,
 Till final dissolution, wander here ;
 Not in the neighbouring moon as some have dream'd ;
 Those argent fields more likely habitants, 460
 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold
 Betwixt the angelical and human kind.
 Hithor of ill join'd sons and daughters born
 First from the ancient world those giants came
 With many a vain exploit, though then renown'd : 465
 The builders next of Babel on the plain
 Of Sennaar, and still with vain design,
 New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build •

PARADISE LOST.

67

Others came single ; he who, to be deem'd
A God, leap'd fondly into *Ætna* flames, 470
Empedocles ; and he who, to enjoy
Plato's *Elysium*, leap'd into the sea,
Cleombrotus ; and many more too long,
Embryos, and idiots, eremites, and friars
White, black, and gray, with all their trumpery 475
Here pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek
In *Golgotha* him dead who lives in Heaven ;
And they who, to be sure of Paradise,
Dying, put on the weeds of *Dominic*,
Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguised ; 480
They pass the planets seven, and pass the fix'd,
And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs
The trepidation talk'd, and that first moved ;
And now *Saint Peter* at Heaven's wicket seems
To wait them with his keys, and now at foot 485
Of Heaven's ascent they lift their feet, when lo
A violent cross-wind from either coast
Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry
Into the devious air : Then might ye see
Cows, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, toss'd
And flutter'd into rags ; then reliques, beads, 491
Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,
The sport of winds : All these, up-whirl'd aloft,
Fly o'er the backside of the world far off
Into a *Limbo* large and broad, since call'd 495
The *Paradise of Fools*, to few unknown
Long after, now unpeopled and untrod.
All this dark globe the *Fiend* found as he pass'd,
And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam
Of dawning light turn'd thitherward in haste 500
His travel'd steps : far distant he descries
Ascending by degrees magnificent
Up to the wall of Heaven a structure high ;
At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd
The work as of a kingly palace-gate, 505
With frontispiece of diamond and gold

Embellish'd ; thick with sparkling orient gems
 The portal shone, inimitable on earth
 By medel, or by shading pencil drawn.
 The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw 510
 Angels ascending and descending, bands
 Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled
 To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz
 Dreaming by night under the open sky,
 And waking cried, *This is the gate of Heaven.* 515
 Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood
 There always, but drawn up to Heaven sometimes
 Viewless ; and underneath a bright sea flow'd
 Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon
 Who after came from earth, sailing arrived 520
 Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake
 Wrapp'd in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.
 The stairs were then let down, whether to dare
 The Fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate
 His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss : 525
 Direct against which open'd from beneath,
 Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,
 A passage down to the Earth, a passage wide,
 Wider by far than that of aftertimes
 Over mount Sion, and, though that were large, 530
 Over the Promised Land to God so dear ;
 By which to visit oft those happy tribes,
 On high behests his Angels to and fro
 Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard
 From Paneas, the fount of Jordan's flood, 535
 To Beërsaba where the Holy Land
 Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore ;
 So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were set
 To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave
 Satan from hence, now on the lower stair, 540
 That scaled by steps of gold to Heaven-gate,
 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
 Of all this world at once. As when a scout,
 Through dark and desert ways with peril gone

PARADISE LOST.

69

All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn 545
 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,
 Which to his eye discovers unaware
 The goodly prospect of some foreign land
 First seen, or some renown'd metropolis
 With glistering spires and pinnacles adorn'd, 550
 Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams.
 Such wonder seized, though after Heaven seen,
 The Spirit malign, but much more envy seized,
 At sight of all this world beheld so fair.
 Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood
 So high above the circling canopy 556
 Of night's extended shade,) from eastern point
 Of Libra to the fleecy star that bears
 Andromeda far off Atlantic seas
 Beyond the horizon ; then from pole to pole 560
 He views in breadth, and without longer pause
 Down right into the world's first region throws
 His flight precipitant, and winds with ease
 Through the pure marble air his oblique way
 Amongst innumerable stars, that shone 565
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds ;
 Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,
 Like those Hesperian gardens famed of old,
 Fortunate fields, and groves, and flowery vales,
 Thrice happy isles ; but who dwelt happy there 570
 He staid not to inquire : Above them all
 The golden sun, in splendour likest Heaven,
 Allured his eye ; thither his course he bends
 Through the calm firmament (but up or down,
 By centre, or eccentric, hard to tell, 575
 Or longitude,) where the great luminary
 Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,
 Dispenses light from far ; they, as they move
 Their starry dance in numbers that compute 580
 Days, months, and years, towards his all cheering lamp
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd

By his magnetic beam, that gently warms
 The universe, and to each inward part
 With gentle penetration, though unseen, 585
 Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep ;
 So wondrously was set his station bright.
 Their lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps
 Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb
 Through his glazed optic tube yet never saw. 590
 The place he found beyond expression bright,
 Compared with aught on earth, metal or stone ;
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd
 With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire ;
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear ; 595
 If stone, carbuncle most or crysolite,
 Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone
 In Aaron's breastplate, and a stone besides
 Imagined rather oft, than elsewhere seen,
 That stone, or like to that which here below 600
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,
 In vain, though by their powerful art they bind
 Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,
 Drain'd through a limbeck to his native form. 605
 What wonder then if fields and regions here
 Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run
 Portable gold, when with one virtuous touch
 The archchemic sun, so far from us remote,
 Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd, 610
 Here in the dark so many precious things
 Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
 Undazzled ; far and wide his eye commands,
 For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade, 615
 But all sunshine, as when his beams at noon
 Culminate from the equator, as they now
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round
 Shadow from body opaque can fall ; and the air,
 No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray 620

To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,
 The same whom John saw also in the sun :
 His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid ;
 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar 625
 Circled his head, nor less his locks behind
 Illustrious on his shoulders fledge with wings
 Lay waving round ; on some great charge employ
 He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.
 Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope 630
 To find who might direct his wandering flight
 To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,
 His journey's end and our beginning woe.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,
 Which else might work him danger or delay : 635
 And now a stripling Cherub he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smiled celestial, and to every limb
 Suitable grace diffused, so well he feign'd :
 Under a coronet his flowing hair 640
 In curls on either cheek play'd ; wings he wore
 Of many a colour'd plume, sprinkled with gold ;
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
 Before his decent steps a silver wand.
 He drew not nigh unheard ; the Angel bright, 645
 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,
 Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known
 The Archangel Uriel, one of the seven
 Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,
 Stand ready at command, and are his eyes 650
 That run through all the Heavens, or down to the Earth
 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
 O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accosts :
 Uriel, for thou of those seven Spirits that stand
 In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright, 655
 The first art wont his great authentic will,
 Interpreter through highest Heaven to bring.
 Where all his sons thy embassy attend ;

And here art likeliest by supreme decree
 Like honour to obtain, and as his eye 660
 To visit oft this new creation round ;
 Unspeakable desire to see and know
 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom
 All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd, 665
 Hath brought me from the choirs of Cherubim
 Alone thus wandering. Brightest Seraph, tell
 In which of all these shining orbs hath Man
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,
 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ; 670
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze
 Or open admiration him behold,
 On whom the great Creator hath bestowed
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd ;
 That both in him and all things, as is meet, 675
 The universal Maker we may praise ;
 Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes
 To deepest Hell, and, to repair that loss,
 Created this new happy race of Men
 To serve him better : Wise are all his ways. 680
 So spake the false dissembler unperceived ;
 For neither Man nor Angels can discern
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone,
 By his permissive will, through Heaven and Earth
 And oft, though Wisdom wake, Suspicion sleeps 685
 At Wisdom's gate, and to Simplicity
 Resigns her charge, while Goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems ; which now for once beguiled
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 690
 The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heaven ;
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,
 In his uprightness, answer thus return'd :
 Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know
 The works of God, thereby to glorify 695
 The great Workmaster, leads to no excess

PARADISE LOST.

73

That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps, 700
 Contented with report, hear only in Heaven :
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,
 Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
 Had in remembrance always with delight ;
 But what creative mind can comprehend 705
 Their number, or the wisdom infinite
 That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep
 I saw when at his word the formless mass,
 This world's material mould, came to a heap ;
 Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar 710
 Stood ruled, stood vast infinitude confined ;
 Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
 Light shone, and order from disorder sprung :
 Swift to their several quarters hasted then
 The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire ; 715
 And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven
 Flew upward, spirited with various forms,
 That roll'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars
 Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move.
 Each had his place appointed, each his course ; 720
 The rest in circuit walls this universe.
 Look downward on that globe, whose hither side
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;
 That place is Earth, the seat of Man ; that light
 His day, which else, as the other hemisphere, 725
 Night would invade ; but there the neighbouring moon
 (So call that opposite fair star) her aid
 Timely interposes, and her monthly round
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heaven,
 With borrow'd light her countenance triform 730
 Hence fills and empties to enlighten the Earth,
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.
 That spot, to which I point, is Paradise,

Adam's abode ; those lofty shades, his bower.

Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires. 735

Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan, bowing low,

As to Superior Spirits is wont in Heaven,

Where honour due and reverence none neglects,

Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,

Down from the ecliptic, sped with hoped success, 740

Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel ;

Nor staid, till on Niphates' top he lights.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IV.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil; journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation are described; overleaps the bounds; sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve, his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse: thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation by seducing them to transgress: Then leaves them awhile to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel descending on a sunbeam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil Spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good Angel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures on the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest: Their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil Spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping: there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel: by whom questioned, he scornfully answers; prepares resistance; but, hindered by a sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise

O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw
The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
Came furious down to be revenged on men,
Woe to the inhabitants on earth! that now, 5
While time was, our first parents had been warn'd
The coming of their secret foe, and scaped—
Haply so scaped his mortal snare: For now
Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,
The tempter ere the accuser of mankind, 10
To wreak on innocent frail Man his loss
Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell

Yet, not rejoicing in his speed, though bold
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,
 Begins his dire attempt ; which nigh the birth 15
 Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,
 And like a devilish engine back recoils
 Upon himself ; horror and doubt distract
 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
 The Hell within him ; for within him Hell 20
 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly
 By change of place : Now conscience wakes despair
 That slumber'd ; wakes the bitter memory
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be 25
 Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
 Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view
 Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixed sad ;
 Sometimes towards Heaven, and the full-blazing sun,
 Which now sat high in his meridian tower : 30
 Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began :
 O thou, that, with surpassing glory crown'd,
 Look'st from thy sole dominion like the God
 Of this new world ; at whose sight all the stars
 Hide their diminish'd heads ; to thee I call, 35
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,
 O Sun ! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,
 That bring to my remembrance from what state
 I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere ;
 Till pride and worse ambition threw me down 40
 Warring in Heaven against Heaven's matchless King :
 Ah, wherefore ! he deserved no such return
 From me, whom he created what I was
 In that bright eminence, and with his good
 Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard. 45
 What could be less than to afford him praise,
 The easiest recompense, and pay him thanks,
 How due ! yet all his good proved ill in me,
 And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high
 I 'sdain'd subjection, and thought one step higher 50

PARADISE LOST.

77

Would set me highest, and in a moment quit
 The debt immense of endless gratitude,
 So burdensome still paying, still to owe :
 Forgetful what from him I still received,
 And understood not that a grateful mind 55
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
 Indebted and discharged ; what burden then ?
 O, had his powerful destiny ordain'd
 Me some inferior Angel, I had stood
 Then happy ; no unbounded hope had raised 64
 Ambition ! Yet why not ? some other Power
 As great might have aspired, and me, though mean,
 Drawn to his part ; but other Powers as great
 Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd. 65
 Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand ?
 Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what to accuse,
 But Heaven's free love dealt equally to all ?
 Be then his love accursed, since love or hate,
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe. 70
 Nay, cursed be thou ; since against his thy will
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.
 Me miserable ! which way shall I fly
 Infinite wrath and infinite despair ?
 Which way I fly is Hell ; myself am Hell ; 72t
 And, in the lowest deep, a lower deep
 Still threatening to devour me opens wide,
 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven.
 O, then, at last relent : Is there no place
 Left for repentance, none for pardon left ? 80
 None left but by submission ; and that word
 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
 Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduced
 With other promises and other vaunts
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue 85
 The Omnipotent. Ah me ! they little know
 How dearly I abide that boast so vain,
 Under what torments inwardly I groan,

While they adore me on the throne of Hell.
 With diadem and sceptre high advanced, 90
 The lower still I fall, only supreme
 In misery : Such joy ambition finds.
 But say I could repent, and could obtain,
 By act of grace, my former state ; how soon
 Would height recal high thoughts, how soon unsay 95
 What feign'd submission swore ? Ease would recant
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void.
 For never can true reconciliation grow,
 Where wounds of deadly hate have pierced so deep :
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse 100
 And heavier fall ; so should I purchase dear
 Short intermission bought with double smart.
 This knows my Punisher ; therefore as far
 From granting he, as I from begging, peace ;
 All hope excluded thus, behold, in stead 105
 Of us outcast, exiled, his new delight,
 Mankind created, and for him this world.
 So farewell, hope ; and with hope farewell, fear ;
 Farewell, remorse ! all good to me is lost ;
 Evil, be thou my good ; by thee at least 110
 Divided empire with Heaven's King I hold,
 By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;
 As Man, ere long, and this new world shall know.
 Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face
 Thrice changed with pale, ire, envy, and despair ; 115
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd
 Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.
 For heavenly minds from such distempers soul
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm, 120
 Artificer of fraud ; and was the first
 That practis'd falsehood under saintly show,
 Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge :
 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
 Uriel once warn'd ; whose eye pursu'd him down 125
 The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount

PARADISE LOST.

79

Saw him disfigured, more than could befall
 Spirit of happy sort : His gestures fierce
 He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,
 As he supposed, all unobserved, unseen. 150
 So on he fares, and to the border comes
 Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,
 Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,
 As with a rural mound, the champaign head
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides 135
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,
 Access denied ; and overhead up grew
 Insuperable height of loftiest shade,
 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,
 A silvan scene ; and, as the ranks ascend 140
 Shade above shade, a woody theatre
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops
 The verduous wall of Paradise up sprung :
 Which to our general sire gave prospect large
 Into his nether empire neighbouring round. 145
 And higher than that wall a circling row
 Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,
 Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue
 Appear'd, with gay enamel'd colours mix'd ;
 On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams 150
 Than on fair evening cloud or humid bow,
 When God hath shower'd the earth ; so lovely seem'd
 That landscape : and of pure now purer air
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive 155
 All sadness but despair : Now gentle gales,
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
 Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail
 Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are pass'd 160
 Mozarabic, off at sea north-east winds blow
 Sabeau odours from the spicy shore
 Of Araby the bless'd ; with such delay
 Well pleased they slack their course, and many a league

Cheer'd with the greatful smell old Ocean smiles : 165
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend,
 Who came their bane ; though with them better pleased
 Than Asmodæus with the fishy fume
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse
 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent 170
 From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to the ascent of that steep savage hill
 Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow ;
 But further way found none, so thick entwined,
 As one continued brake, the undergrowth 175
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd
 All path of man or beast that pass'd that way.
 One gate there only was, and that look'd east
 On the other side : which when the archfelon saw,
 Due entrance he disdain'd : and, in contempt, 180
 At one slight bound high overleap'd all bound
 Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
 Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve 185
 In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,
 Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold :
 Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash
 Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,
 Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault, 190
 In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles :
 So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold ;
 So since into his church lowd hirelings climb.
 Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,
 The middle tree and highest there that grew, 195
 Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death
 To them who lived ; nor on the virtue thought
 Of that lifegiving plant, but only used
 For prospect, what well used had been the pledge 200
 Of immortality. So little knows
 Any, but God alone, to value right

PARADISE LOST.

81

The good before him, but perverts best things
 To worst abuse or to their meanest use.
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views, 205
 To all delight of human sense exposed,
 In narrow room, Nature's whole wealth, yea more,
 A Heaven on Earth : For blissful Paradise
 Of God the garden was, by him in the east
 Of Eden planted ; Eden stretch'd her line 210
 From Auran eastward to the royal towers
 Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,
 Or where the sons of Eden long before
 Dwelt in Telassar : In this pleasant soil
 His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd ; 215
 Out of the fertile ground he caused to grow
 All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste ,
 And all amid them stood the tree of life,
 High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit
 Of vegetable gold ; and next to life, 220
 Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,
 Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.
 Southward through Eden went a river large,
 Nor changed his course, but through the shaggy hill
 Pass'd underneath ingulf'd ; for God had thrown 225
 That mountain as his garden mound high raised
 Upon the rapid current, which, through veins
 Of porous earth with kindly thirst updrawn,
 Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill
 Water'd the garden ; thence united fell 230
 Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,
 Which from his darksome passage now appears,
 And now, divided into four main streams,
 Runs diverse, wandering many a famous realm
 And country, whereof here needs no account ; 235
 But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
 How from that sapphire fount the crisped brooks,
 Rolling up orient pearl and sands of gold,
 With mazy error under pendent shades
 Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240

Flowers worthy of Paradise, which not nice Art
 In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon
 Pour'd forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain,
 Both where the morning sun first warmly smote
 The open field, and where the unpierced shade 245
 Imbrown'd the noontide bowers : Thus was this place
 A happy rural seat of various view ;
 Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,
 Others whose fruit, burnish'd with golden rind,
 Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true, 250
 If true, here only, and of delicious taste :
 Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks
 Grazing the tender herb, were interposed,
 Or palmy hillock ; or the flowery lap
 Of some irriguous valley spread her store, 255
 Flowers of all hue, and without thorn the rose :
 Another side, umbrageous grots and caves
 Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine
 Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps
 Luxuriant ; meanwhile murmuring waters fall 260
 Down the slope hills, dispersed, or in a lake,
 That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd
 Her crystal mirror holds, unite their streams.
 The birds their choir apply ; airs, vernal airs,
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune 265
 The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,
 Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,
 Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field
 Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flowers,
 Herself a fairy flower, by gloomy Dis 270
 Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain
 To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet grove
 Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspired
 Castalian spring might with this Paradise
 Of Eden strive ; nor that Nyseian isle 275
 Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,
 Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Libyan Jove,
 Hid Amalthea, and her florid son

PARADISE LOST.

83

Young Bacchus, from his stepdame Rhea's eye ; 287
 Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard, 290
 Mount Amara, though this by some supposed
 True Paradise under the Ethiop line
 By Nilus' head, enclosed with shining rock,
 A whole day's journey high, but wide remote
 From this Assyrian garden ; where the Fiend 285
 Saw, undelighted, all delight, all kind
 Of living creatures, new to sight, and strange.
 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad
 In naked majesty, seem'd lords of all : 290
 And worthy seem'd ; for in their looks divine
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure
 (Severe, but in true filial freedom placed,)
 Whence true authority in men ; though both 295
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd ;
 For contemplation he and valour form'd ;
 For softness she and sweet attractive grace ;
 He for God only, she for God in him :
 His fair large front and eye sublime declared 300
 Absolute rule ; and hyacinthine locks
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad :
 She, as a veil, down to the slender waist
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore 305
 Dishevel'd, but in wanton ringlets waved
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied
 Subjection, but required with gentle sway,
 And by her yielded, by him best received ;
 Yielded with coy submission, modest pride, 310
 And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay.
 Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd ;
 Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame
 Of nature's works, honour dishonourable,
 Sin-bred : how have ye troubled all mankind 315
 With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,

And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,
 Simplicity and spotless innocence !
 So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight
 Of God or Angel ; for they thought no ill : 330
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the lovliest pair,
 That ever since in love's embraces met ;
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born
 His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve. †
 Under a tuft of shade that on a green 335
 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain side
 They sat them down ; and, after no more toil
 Of their sweet gardening labour than sufficed
 To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease
 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite 330
 More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell ;
 Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs
 Yielded them, sidelong as they sat recline
 On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers :
 The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind, 335
 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream ;
 Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems
 Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league,
 Alone as they. About them frisking play'd 340
 All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase
 In wood or wilderness, forest or den ;
 Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw,
 Dandled the kid ; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,
 Gambol'd before them ; the unwieldy elephant. 345
 To make them mirth, used all his might, and wreath'd
 His lithe proboscis ; close the serpent sly,
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass 350
 Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat,
 Or bedward ruminating ; for the sun,
 Declined, was hastening now with prone career
 To the ocean iales, and in the ascending scale

PARADISE LOST.

85

Of Heaven the stars that usher evening rose : 355
 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad : †
 O Hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold !
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanced
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360
 Not Spirits, yet to heavenly Spirits bright
 Little inferior : whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them divine resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.
 Ah ! gentle pair, ye little think how nigh 366
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe ;
 More woe, the more you taste is now of joy ;
 Happy, but for so happy ill secured 370
 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heaven
 Ill fenced for Heaven to keep out such a foe
 As now is enter'd ; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,
 Though I unpitied : League with you I seek, 375
 And mutual amity, so straight, so close,
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth : my dwelling haply may not please,
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense ; yet such
 Accept your Maker's work, he gave it me, 380
 Which I as freely give : Hell shall unfold,
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,
 And send forth all her kings ; there will be room,
 Not like these narrow limits, to deceive
 Your numerous offspring ; if no better place, 385
 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge
 On you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd.
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarged, 390
 By conquering this new world, compel me now
 To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor.

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,
 The tyrant's plea, excused his devilish deeds.
 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree 395
 Down he alights among the sportful herd
 Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,
 Now other, as their shape served best his end
 Nearer to view his prey, and, unespied,
 To mark what of their state he more might learn, 400
 By word or action mark'd About them round
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;
 Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied
 In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,
 Straight couches close, then, rising, changes oft 405
 His couchant watch, as one chose his ground,
 Whence rushing, he might surest seize them both,
 Griped in each paw : when Adam, first of men,
 To first of women, Eve, thus moving speech,
 Turn'd him, all ear to hear new utterance flow : 410
 Sole partner and sole part of all these joys,
 Dearer thyself than all ; needs must the Power
 That made us, and for us this ample world,
 Be infinitely good, and of his good
 As liberal and free as infinite ; 415
 That raised us from the dust, and placed us here
 In all this happiness, who at his hand
 Have nothing merited, nor can perform
 Aught whereof he hath need ; he who requires
 From us no other service than to keep 420
 This one, this easy charge, of all the trees
 In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, not to taste that only tree
 Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life
 So near grows death to life, whate'er death is, 425
 Some dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou know'st
 God hath pronounced it death to taste that tree,
 The only sign of our obedience left,
 Among so many signs of power and rule
 Conferr'd upon us, and dominion given 430

Over all other creatures that possess
 Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
 Unlimited of manifold delights: 435
 But let us ever praise him, and extol
 His bounty, following our delightful task,
 To prune these growing plants and tend these flowers,
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.
 To whom thus Eve replied: O thou for whom 440
 And from whom I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh,
 And without whom am to no end, my guide
 And head! what thou hast said is just and right.
 For we to him indeed all praises owe
 And daily thanks; I chiefly, who enjoy 445
 So ~~far~~ the happier lot, enjoying thee
 Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou
 Like consort to thyself canst no where find. †
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep
 I first awaked, and found myself reposed 450
 Under a shade on flowers, much wondering where
 And what I was, whence thither brought and how.
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound
 Of waters issued from a cave, and spread
 Into a liquid plain, then stood unmoved 455
 Pure as the expanse of Heaven; I thither went
 With unexperienced thought, and laid me down
 On the green bank, to look into the clear
 Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.
 As I bent down to look, just opposite 460
 A shape within the watery gleam appear'd,
 Bending to look on me. I started back;
 It started back: but pleas'd I soon return'd;
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answering looks
 Of sympathy and love: There I had fix'd 465
 Mine eyes till now, and pined with vain desire,
 Had not a voice thus warn'd me; "What thou seest,
 What there thou seest, fair Creature, is thyself;

With thee it came and goes : but follow me,
 And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470
 Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he
 Whose image thou art ; him thou shalt enjoy
 Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear
 Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd
 Mother of human race. ~~What~~ What could I do, 475
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led ?
 Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,
 Under a platane ; yet methought less fair
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,
 Than that smooth watery image : back I turn'd ; 480
 Thou following criest aloud, " Return, fair Eve ;
 Whom fliest thou ? whom thou fliest, of him thou art,
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side 485
 Henceforth an individual solace dear ;
 Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim
 My other half : " With that thy gentle hand
 Seized mine : I yielded ; and from that time see
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace, 490
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

So spake our general mother, and with eyes
 Of conjugal attraction unreprieved,
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd
 On our first father ; half her swelling breast 495
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold
 Of her loose tresses hid : he in delight,
 Both of her beauty and submissive charms,
 Smiled with superior love, as Jupiter
 On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 500
 That shed May flowers ; and press'd her matron lip
 With kisses pure : Aside the Devil turn'd
 For envy ; yet with jealous leer malign
 Eyed them askance, and to himself thus plain'd :
 Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two,
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms, 506

PARADISE LOST.

89

The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill
 Of bliss on bliss: while I to Hell am thrust,
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,
 Among our other torments not the least, 510
 Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines. -f
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
 From their own mouths: All is not theirs, it seems;
 One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,
 Forbidden them to taste: Knowledge forbidden! 515
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord
 Envy them that? Can it be sin to know?
 Can it be death? And do they only stand
 By ignorance? Is that their happy state,
 The proof of their obedience and their faith: 520
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin! hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject
 Envious commands, invented with design
 To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt 525
 Equal with Gods: aspiring to be such,
 They taste and die: What likelier can ensue?
 But first with narrow search I must walk round
 This garden, and no corner let me unspied;
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530
 Some wandering Spirit of Heaven by fountain side,
 Or in thick shade retired, from him to draw
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,
 Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed! 535-f

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began [roam.
 Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his
 Meanwhile in utmost longitude, where Heaven
 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect
 Against the eastern gate of Paradise
 Levelled his evening rays: It was a rock
 Of alabaster, piled up the clouds,

Conspicuous far, winding with ~~the~~ ascent 545
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high ;
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.
 Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,
 Chief of the angelic guards, awaiting night ; 550
 About him exercised heroic games
 The unarmed youth of Heaven, but nigh at hand
 Celestial armory, shields, helms, and spears,
 Hung high with diamond flaming and with gold.
 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even 555
 On a sunbeam, swift as a shooting star
 In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fired
 Impress the air, and shows the mariner
 From what point of his compass to beware
 Impetuous winds : He thus began in haste : 560+
 Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place
 No evil thing approach or enter in.
 This day at height of noon came to my sphere
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know 565
 More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,
 God's latest image : I described his way
 Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gait ;
 But on the mount that lies from Eden north,
 Where he first lighted soon discern'd his looks 570
 Alien from Heaven, with passions foul obscured :
 Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade
 Lost sight of him : One of the banish'd crew,
 I fear, hath ventured from the deep, to raise
 New troubles ; him thy care must be to find. 575
 To whom the winged warrior thus return'd :
 Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
 Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitt'st
 See far and wide : In at this gate none pass
 The vigilance here placed, but such as come 580
 Well known from Heaven ; and since meridian hour
 No creature thence : If Spirit of other sort,

So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthly bounds
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar. 585
 But if within the circuit of these walks,
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

So promised he : and Uriel to his charge
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now raised
 Bore him slope downward to the sun now fallen 591
 Beneath the Azores ; whether the prime orb,
 Incredible how swift, had thither roll'd
 Diurnal ; or this less volúble earth,
 By shorter flight to the east, had left him there, 595
 Arraying with reflected purple and gold
 The clouds that on his western throne attend.
 Now came still Evening on, and Twilight gray
 Had in her sober livery all things clad ;
 Silence accompanied ; for beast and bird, 600
 They to their grassy couch, these to their nests,
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;
 She all night long her amorous descant sung ;
 Silence was pleased : Now glow'd the firmament
 With living sapphires : Hesperus, that led 605
 The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon,
 Rising in clouded majesty, at length
 Apparent queen unveil'd her peerless light,
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

When Adam thus to Eve : Fair Consort, the hour
 Of night, and all things now retired to rest, 611
 Mind us of like repose ; since God hath set
 Labour and rest, as day and night to men
 Successivo ; and the timely dew of sleep,
 Now falling with soft slumbrous weight, inclines 615
 Our eyelids : Other creatures all day long
 Rove idle, unemployed, and less need rest ;
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind
 Appointed, which declares his dignity,
 And the regard of Heaven on all his ways : 620

While other animals inactive range,
 And of their doings God takes no account.
 To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east
 With first approach of light, we must be risen,
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform 625
 Yon flowery arbours, yonder alleys green,
 Our walk at noon with branches overgrown,
 That mock our scant manuring, and require
 More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth
 Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums, 630
 That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease ;
 Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest. —
 To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd
 My Author and Disposer what thou bidd'st 635
 Unargued I obey : so God ordains :
 God is thy law, thou mine : To know no more
 Is woman's happiest knowledge, and her praise.
 With thee conversing, I forget all time ;
 All seasons, and their change, all please alike. 640
 Sweet is the breath of Morn, her rising sweet,
 With charm of earliest birds : pleasant the sun,
 When first on this delightful land he spreads
 His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,
 Glistening with dew ; fragrant the fertile earth 645
 After soft showers ; and sweet the coming on
 Of grateful Evening mild ; then silent Night,
 With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,
 And these the gems of Heaven, her starry train :
 But neither breath of Morn, when she ascends 650
 With charm of earliest birds : nor rising sun
 On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, flower,
 Glistening with dew ; nor fragrance after showers ;
 Nor grateful evening mild ; nor silent Night,
 With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon, 655
 Or glittering starlight, without thee, is sweet.
 But wherefore all night long shine these ? for whom
 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?

PARADISE LOST.

93

To whom our general ancestor replied : †
 Daughter of God and Man, accomplish'd Eve, 660
 These have their course to finish round the earth,
 By morrow evening, and from land to land
 In order, though to nations yet unborn,
 Ministering light prepared, they set and rise ,
 Lest total Darkness should by night regain 665
 Her old possession, and extinguish life
 In Nature and all things ; which these soft fires
 Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat
 Of various influence foment and warm,
 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670
 Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow
 On earth, made hereby apter to receive
 Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.
 These then, though unbeheld in deep of night, 674
 Shine not in vain ; nor think, though men were none,
 That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise
 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth
 Unseen, both when we wake and when we sleep ;
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold
 Both day and night : How often from steep 680
 Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
 Sole, or responsive each to other's note,
 Singing their great Creator ? oft in bands
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk, 685
 With heavenly touch of instrumental sounds
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven †
 Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd
 On to their blissful bower : it was a place 690
 Chosen by the sov'reign Planter, when he framed
 All things to Man's delightful use : the roof
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
 Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew
 Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side 695

Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,
 Fenced up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower,
 Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,
 Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought
 Mosaic ; underfoot the violet, 700
 Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay
 Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone
 Of costliest emblem : Other creature here,
 Bird, beast, insect, or worm, durst enter none,
 Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower 705
 More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,
 Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor Nymph
 Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,
 With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,
 Espoused Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed : 710
 And heavenly choirs the hymenean sung,
 What day the genial Angel to our sire
 Brought her in naked beauty more adorn'd,
 More lovely, than Pandora, whom the Gods
 Endow'd with all their gifts, and O ! too like 715
 In sad event, when to the unwiser son
 Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnared
 Mankind with her fair looks, to be avenged
 On him who had stolen Jove's authentic fire.
 Thus, at their shady lodge arrived, both stood, 720
 Both turn'd, and under open sky adored
 The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heaven,
 Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,
 And starry pole : Thou also madest the night,
 Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day 725
 Which we, in our appointed work employ'd,
 Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help
 And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss
 Ordain'd by thee ; and this delicious place
 For us too large, where thy abundance wants 730
 Partakers, and uncropp'd falls to the ground.
 But thou hast promised from us two a race +

PARADISE LOST.

95

To fill the earth, who shall with us extol
 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake
 And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep. 735
 This said unanimous, and other rites
 Observing none, but adoration pure
 Which God likes best, into their inmost bower
 Handed they went ; and, eased the putting off
 These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740
 Straight side by side were laid , nor turn'd, I ween,
 Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites
 Mysterious of connubial love refused :
 Whatever hypocrites austere'y talk
 Of purity, and place, and innocence, 745
 Defaming as impure what God declares
 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.
 Our Maker bids increase ; who bids abstain
 But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man ?
 Hail, wedded Love ! mysterious law, true source 750
 Of human offspring, sole propriety
 In Paradise of all things common else. —†—
 By thee adulterous Lust was driven from men —
 Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee,
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure, 755
 Re'ations dear, and all the charities
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known. †
 Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets, 760
 Whose bed is undefiled and chaste pronounced,
 Present or past, as saints and patriarchs used.
 Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,
 Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile 765
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendear'd,
 Casual fruition ; nor in court amours,
 Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,
 Or serenate, which the starved lver sings
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 770

These, lull'd by nightingales, embracing slept.
 And on their naked limbs the flowery roof
 Shower'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,
 Bless'd pair! and O' yet happiest, if ye seek
 No happier state, and know to know no more. 775

Now had night measured with her shadowy cone
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim,
 Forth issuing at the accustomed hour, stood arm'd
 To their night watches in warlike parade; 780
 When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake:

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the north;
 Our circuit meets full west. As flame they part,
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear. 785
 From these two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

Itthuriel and Zephon, with wing'd speed
 Search through this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook;
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge, 790
 Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm.

This evening from the sun's decline arrived,
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escaped
 The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt; 795
 Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant files,
 Dazzling the moon; these to the bower direct
 In search of whom they sought: Him there they found
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve, 800

Assaying by his devilish art to reach
 The organs of her fancy, and with them forge
 Illusions, as he list, phantasms and dreams.
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint
 The animal spirits that from pure blood arise 805
 Like gentle breaths, from rivers pure, thence raise
 At least distemper'd, discontented thoughts,
 Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,

PARADISE LOST.

97

Blown up with high conceits ingendering pride.
 Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear 810
 Touch'd lightly ; for no falsehood can endure
 Touch of celestial temper, but returns
 Of force to its own likeness : Up he starts
 Discover'd and surpris'd. As when a spark
 Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid 815
 Fit for the tun some magazine to store
 Against a rumour'd war, the smutty grain,
 With sudden blaze diffused, inflames the air ;
 So started up in his own shape the Fiend.
 Back stepp'd those two fair Angels, half amazed 820
 So sudden to behold the grisly king ;
 Yet thus, unmoved with fear, accost him soon :
 Which of those rebel Spirits adjudged to Hell
 Comest thou, escaped thy prison ? and, transform'd,
 Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait, 825
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep ?
 Know ye not then, said Satan, fill'd with scorn,
 Know ye not me ? ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar :
 Not to know me argues yourselves unknown, 830
 The lowest of your throng ; or, if ye know,
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain ?
 To whom thus Zephor, answering scorn with scorn :
 Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same, 835
 Or undiminish'd brightness to be known,
 As when thou stood'st in Heaven upright and pure ;
 That glory then, when thou no more wast good,
 Departed from thee ; and thou resembl'st now
 Thy sin and place of doom, obscure and foul. 840
 But come ; for thou, be sure, shalt give account
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
 This place inviolable, and these from harm.
 So spake the Cherub : and his grave rebuke,
 Severe in youthful beauty, added grace 845
 Invincible : Abash'd the Devil stood,

And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
 Virtue in her shape how lovely ; saw, and pined
 His loss ; but chiefly to find here observed
 His lustre visibly impair'd ; yet seem'd 850
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
 Best with the best, the sender, not the sent,
 Or all at once ; more glory will be won,
 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,
 Will save us trial what the least can do 855
 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend replied not, overcome with rage ;
 But, like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,
 Champing his iron curb : To strive or fly
 He held it vain ; awe from above had quell'd 860
 His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh
 The western point, where those half-rounding guards
 Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,
 Awaiting next command. To whom their Chief,
 Gabriel, from the front thus call'd aloud : 865

O friends ! I hear the tread of nimble feet
 Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern
 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade ;
 And with them comes a third of regal port,
 But faded splendour wan ; who by his gait 870
 And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,
 Not likely to part hence without contest ;
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd, —
 And brief related whom they brought, where found, 875
 How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake
 Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescribe
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge
 Of others, who approve not to transgress 880
 By thy example, but have power and right
 To question thy bold entrance on this place ;
 Employ'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ?

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow : 885
 Gabriel ! thou hadst in Heaven the esteem of wise,
 And such I held thee ; but this question ask'd
 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,
 Though thither doom'd ? Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt,
 And boldly venture to what ever place 891
 Furthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change
 Torment with ease, and soonest recompense
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought ;
 To thee no reason, who know'st only good, 895
 But evil hast not tried : and wilt object
 His will who bounds us ? Let him surer bar
 His iron gates, if he intends our stay
 In that dark durance : thus much what was ask'd.
 The rest is true, they found me where they say ; 900
 But that implies not violence or harm. ✕
 Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel moved,
 Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied :
 O loss of one in Heaven to judge of wise
 Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew, 905
 And now returns him from his prison scaped,
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither
 Unlicensed from his bounds in Hell prescribed ;
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain 910
 However, and to scape his punishment !
 So judge thou still presumptuous ! till the wrath,
 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight
 Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain 915
 Can equal anger infinite provoked.
 But wherefore thou alone ? wherefore with thee
 Came not all hell broke loose ? is pain to them
 Less pain, less to be fled ; or thou than they
 Less hardy to endure ? Courageous Chief ! 920
 The first in flight from pain ! hadst thou alleg'd

To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern ~~+~~
Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain, 925
Insulting Angel! well thou know'st I stood

Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,
And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.

But still thy words at random, as before, 930

Argues thy inexperience what behoves
From hard assays and ill successes pass'd
A faithful leader, not to hazard all
Through ways of danger by himself untried:

I, therefore, I alone first undertook 935

To wing the desolate abyss, and spy
This new created world, whereof in Hell

Fame is not silent, here in hope to find

Better abode, and my afflicted Powers

To settle here on earth, or in mid air; 940

Though for possession put to try once more

What thou and thy gay legions dare against;

Whose easier business were to serve their Lord

High up in Heaven, with songs to hymn his throne,
And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight. 945

To whom the warrior Angel soon replied:

To say and straight unsay, pretending first

Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,

Argues no leader but a liar traced,

Satan, and couldest thou 'faithful' add? O name, 950

O sacred name of faithfulness profaned!

Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?

Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head.

Was this your discipline and faith engaged,

Your military obedience, to dissolve 955

Allegiance to the acknowledged Power supreme?

And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem

Patron of liberty, who more than thou

Once fawn'd, and cringed, and servilely adored
 Heaven's awful Monarch? wherefore, but in hope 960
 To dispossess him, and thyself to reign?

But mark what I aread thee now, Avaunt!

Fly thither whence thou fledst! If from this hour

Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,

Back to the' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd, 965

And seal thee so as henceforth not to scorn

subt The facile gates of Hell too slightly barr'd. + + +

So threatened he; but Satan to no threats

Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied

Then when I am thy captive talk of chains, 970

Proud liminary Cherub! but ere then

Far heavier load thyself expect to feel

From my prevailing arm, though Heaven's King

Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,

Used to the yoke, draw'st his triumphant wheels 975

In progress through the road of Heaven star-paved.

While thus he spake, the angelic squadron bright

Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in-mooned horns

Their phalanx, and began to hem him round

With ported spears, as thick as when a field 980

Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends

Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind

Sways them; the careful ploughman doubting stands,

Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeless sheaves

Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarm'd, 985

Collecting all his might, dilated stood,

Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremoved +

His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest

Sat Horror plumed; nor wanted in his grasp

What seem'd both spear and shield: now dreadful deeds

Might have ensued, nor only Paradise 991

In this commotion, but the starry cope

Of Heaven perhaps, or all the elements

At least had gone to wreck, disturb'd and torn

With violence in this conflict, had not soon 995

The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,

Hung forth in Heaven his golden scales, yet seen
 Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,
 Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,
 The pendulous round earth with balanced air 1000
 In counterpoise, now ponders all events,
 Battles and realms : in these he put two weights,
 The sequel each of parting and of fight :
 The latter quick up flew and kick'd the beam ;
 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend : 1005
 Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine ;
 Neither our own, but given : what folly then
 To boast what arms can do ? since thine no more
 Than Heaven permits, nor mine, though doubled now
 To trample thee as mire : for proof look up, 1010
 And read thy lot in yon celestial sign ; [weak,
 Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how
 If thou resist. The Fiend look'd up, and knew
 His mounted scale aloft : no more ; but fled
 Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night. 1015

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK V.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: They come forth to their day-labours; Their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise; his appearance described; his coming discerned by Adam afar off sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in the' eastern clime
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,
When Adam waked, so custom'd; for his sleep
Was aery light, from pure digestion bred,
And temperate vapours bland, which the' only sound 5
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,
Lightly dispersed, and the shrill matin song
Of birds on every bough; so much the more
His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve
With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek, 10
As through unquiet rest: he, on his side
Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial love
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,
Shot forth peculiar graces; then with voice 15
Mild as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus: Awake,
My fairest, my espoused, my latest found,
Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight!

Awake : the morning shines, and the fresh field 20
 Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
 Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
 How nature paints her colours, how the bee
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet. 25

Such whispering waked her, but with startled eye
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake :

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,

My glory, my perfection ' glad I see

Thy face, and morn return'd ; for I this night 30

(Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,

If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,

Works of day past, or morrow's next design,

But of offence and trouble, which my mind

Knew never till this irksome night : methought, 35

Glose at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk

With gentle voice ; I thought it thine : it said,

" Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? now is the pleasant time,

The cool, the silent, save where silence yields

To the night-warbling bird, that now awake 40

Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song, now reigns

Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light

Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,

If none regard ; Heaven wakes with all his eyes,

Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ? 45

In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment

Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze."

I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;

To find thee I directed then my walk ;

And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50

That brought me on a sudden to the tree

Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,

Much fairer to my fancy than by day :

And, as I wondering look'd, beside it stood

One shaped and wing'd like one of those from Heaven

By us oft seen ; his dewy locks distill'd 55

Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gazed ;

And, "O fair plant," said he, "with fruit surcharged,
 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
 Nor God, nor Man? Is knowledge so despised? 60
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offer'd good; why else set here?"
 This said, he paused not, but with venturous arm
 He pluck'd, he tasted; me damp horror chill'd 65
 At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold:
 But he thus, overjoy'd: "O fruit divine,
 Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus clogg'd,
 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of men. 70
 And why not Gods of Men; since good, the more
 Communicated, more abundant grows,
 The author not impair'd, but honour'd more?
 Here, happy creature, fair angelic Eve!
 Partake thou also: happy though thou art, 75
 Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be:
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
 Thyself a Goddess, not to earth confined,
 But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes
 Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see 80
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou!"
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part
 Which he had pluck'd; the pleasant savoury smell
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
 And various: wondering at my flight and change
 To this high exaltation; suddenly 90
 My guide was gone, and I, methought sunk down
 And fell asleep; but O, how glad I waked
 To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her night
 Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad:
 Best image of myself, and dearer half, 95

The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
 Affects me equally ; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung, I fear ;
 Yet evil whence ? in thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know that in the soul **100**
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve
 Reason as chief ; among these Fancy next
 Her office holds ; of all external things,
 Which the five watchful senses represent,
 She forms imaginations, aery shapes, **105**
 Which Reason, joining or disjoining, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion ; then retires
 Into her private cell, when nature rests.
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes **110**
 To imitate her ; but, misjoining shapes,
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams ;
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Some such resemblances, methinks, I find
 Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream, **115**
 But with addition strange ; yet be not sad.
 Evil into the mind of God or Man
 May come and go, so unapproved, and leave
 No spot or blame behind : which gives me hope
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream **120**
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do
 Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,
 That wont to be more cheerful and serene
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world ;
 And let us to our fresh employments rise **125**
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers
 That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,
 Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store.
 So cheer'd he his fair spouse, and she was cheer'd ;
 But silently a gentle tear let fall **130**
 From either eye, and wiped them with her hair ;
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,
 Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell

PARADISE LOST.

107

Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended. 135

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.
But first, from under shady arborous roof
Soon as they forth were come to open sight
Of dayspring, and the sun, who, scarce uprisen,
With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean-brim, 140

Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,
Discovering in wide landscape all the east
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains ;
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
Their orisons, each morning duly paid 145

In various style ; for neither various style
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounced, or sung
Unmeditated : such prompt eloquence
Flow'd from their lips, in prose or numerous verse, 150
More tunable than needed lute or harp,
To add more sweetness ; and they thus began :

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
Almighty ! Thine this universal frame,
Thus wondrous fair ; thyself how wondrous then ! 155
Unspcakable, who sitt'st above these heavens
To us invisible, or dimly seen

In these thy lowest works ; yet these declare
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine,
Speak, ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160
Angels ; for ye behold him, and with songs
And choral symphonies, day without night,
Circle his throne rejoicing ; ye in Heaven.

On Earth join, all ye creatures, to extol
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end. 165
Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,
If better thou belong not to the dawn,

Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn
With thy bright circler, praise him in thy sphere,
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170
Thou Sun of this great world both eye and soul,

Acknowledge him thy greater ; sound his praise
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,
 And when high noon has gain'd, and when thou fall'st.
 Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fliest, 175
 With the fix'd Stars, fix'd in their orb that fliee ;
 And, ye five other wandering Fires, that move
 In mystic dance not without song, resound
 His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.
 Air, and, ye Elements, the eldest birth 180
 Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run
 Perpetual circle, multiform ; and mix
 And nourish all things ; let your ceaseless change
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.
 Ye Mists and Exhalations, that now rise 185
 From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,
 Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,
 In honour to the world's great Author rise ;
 Whether to deck with clouds the uncolour'd sky,
 Or whet the thirsty earth with falling show'ers, 190
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.
 His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,
 Breathe soft or loud ; and, wave your tops, ye Pines,
 With every plant, in sign of worship wave.
 Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow, 195
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.
 Join voices, all ye living Souls : Ye Birds,
 That singing up to Heaven-gate ascend,
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200
 The earth, and stately tread or lowly creep :
 Witness if I be silent, morn or even,
 To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,
 Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.
 Hail, universal Lord ! be bounteous still 205
 To give us only good ; and if the night
 Have gather'd aught of evil, or conceal'd,
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark !
 So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts

PARADISE LOST.

109

Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm. 210

On to their morning's rural work they haste,
Among sweet dews and flowers ; where any row
Of fruit trees over-woody reach'd too far

Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check
Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine 215

To wed her elm ; she, spoused, about him twines

Her marriageable arms, and with her brings

Her dower, the adopted clusters, to adorn

His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld
With pity Heaven's high King, and to him call'd 220

Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd

To travel with Tobias, and secured

His marriage with the seven-times wedded maid.

Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on Earth
Satan, from Hell scaped through the darksome gulf,
Hath raised in Paradise ; and how disturb'd 225

This night the human pair ; how he designs

In them at once to ruin all mankind.

Go, therefore, half this day as friend with friend
Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade 230

Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retired,

To respite his day-labour with repast,

Or with repose ; and such discourse bring on,

As may advise him of his happy state,
Happiness in his power left free to will, 235

Left to his own free will, his will though free,

Yet mutable ; whence warn him to beware

He swerve not, too secure : Tell him withal

His danger, and from whom ; what enemy,
Late fallen himself from Heaven, is plotting now 240

The fall of others from like state of bliss ;

By violence ? no, for that shall be withstood ;

But by deceit and lies : This let him know,

Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend

Surprisal, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd. 245

So spake the Eternal Father, and fulfill'd

All-justice : Nor delay'd the winged Saint

After his charge received ; but from among
 Thousand celestial Ardours, where he stood
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, upspringing light, 250
 Flew through the midst of Heaven , the angelic choirs,
 On each hand parting, to his speed gave way
 Through all the empyreal road ; till, at the gate
 Of Heaven arrived, the gate self-open'd wide
 On golden hinges turning, as by work 255
 Divine the sov'reign Architect had framed.
 From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,
 Star interposed, however small, he sees,
 Not unconform'd to other shining globes,
 Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crown'd
 Above all hills. As when by night the glass 261
 Of Galileo, less assured, observes
 Imagined lands and regions in the moon .
 Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades
 Delos or Samos first appearing, kens 265
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing
 Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan
 Winnows the buxom air ; till, within soar 270
 Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems
 A phenix, gazed by all as that sole bird,
 When, to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's
 Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.
 At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise 275
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns,
 A seraph wing'd : Six wings he wore to shade
 His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast
 With regal ornament ! the middle pair 280
 Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold .
 And colours dipp'd in Heaven ; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,
 Sky-tinctured grain. Like Maia's son he stood, 285

And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands
 Of Angels under watch ; and to his state
 And to his message high, in honour rise ;
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come 291
 Into the blisful field, through groves of myrrh,
 And flowering odours, cassia, nard, and balm ;
 A wilderness of sweets : for Nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will 295
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above rule or art; enormous bliss.
 Him through the spicy forest onward come
 Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat
 Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun 300
 Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs -
 And Eve within, due at her hour, prepared
 For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst 305
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,
 Berry or grape: To whom thus Adam call'd :
 Haste hither, Eve, and worth thy sight behold
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape
 Comes this way moving ; seems another morn 310
 Risen on midnoon ; some great behest from Heaven
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,
 And, what thy stores contain, bring forth, and pour
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive 315
 Our heavenly stranger : Well may we afford
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow
 From large bestow'd, where nature multiplies
 Her fertile growth, and by disburdening grows
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare. 320
 To whom thus Eve : Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,
 Of God inspired ! small store will serve, where store,
 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;

Save what by frugal storing firmness gains
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes. 325
 But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,
 Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice
 To entertain our Angel guest, as he
 Beholding shall confess, that here on Earth
 God hath dispensed his bounties as in Heaven. 330
 So saying, with despatchful looks in haste
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent ;
 What choice to choose for delicacy best,
 What order, so contrived as not to mix
 Tastes not well join'd, inelegant, but bring 335
 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change ;
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk
 Whatever Earth, all bearing mother, yields
 In India East or West, or middle shore
 In Pontus or the Punic coast, or where 340
 Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat
 Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,
 She gathers tribute large, and on the board
 Heaps with unsparing hand ; for drink the grape
 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths 345
 From many a berry ; and from sweet kernels press'd
 She tempers dulcet creams ; nor these to hold
 Wants her fit vessels pure ; then strows the ground
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfumed.
 Meanwhile our primitive great sire, to meet 350
 His Godlike guest, walks forth, without more train
 Accompanied than with his own complete
 Perfections ; in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits
 On princes, when their rich retinue long 355
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,
 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.
 Nearer his presence Adam, though not awed,
 Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,
 As to a superior nature bowing low, 360
 Thus said : Native of Heaven, for other place

None can than Heaven such glorious shape contain ;
 Since, by descending from the thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us 365
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower
 To rest ; and what the garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline. 370

Whom thus the angelic Virtue answer'd mild :
 Adam, I therefore came ; nor art thou such
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heaven,
 To visit thee ; lead on then where thy bower 375
 O'er shades ; for these midhours, till evening rise,
 I have at will. So to the silvan lodge
 They came, that like Pomona's arbour smiled,
 With flowerets deck'd, and fragrant smells ; but Eve,
 Undeck'd save with herself, more lovely fair 380
 Than Woodnymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd
 Of three that in mount Ida naked strove,
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heaven ; no veil
 She needed, virtue-proof ; no thought infirm
 Alter'd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Hail* 385
 Bestow'd, the holy salutation used
 Long after to bless'd Mary, second Eve.

Hail, Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb
 Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons
 Than with these various fruits the trees of God 390
 Have heap'd this table !—Raised of grassy turf
 Their table was, and mossy seats had round,
 And on her ample square from side to side
 All autumn piled, though spring and autumn here
 Danced hand in hand. A while discourse they hold ; 395
 No far lest dinner cool ; when thus began
 Our author : Heavenly stranger, please to taste
 These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom
 All perfect good, unmeasured out, descends,

To us for food and for delight hath caused 405
 The earth to yield ; unsavoury food perhaps
 To spiritual nature ; only this I know,
 That one celestial Father gives to all.
 To whom the Angel : Therefore what he gives
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to Man in part 410
 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found
 No ingrateful food : and food alike those pure
 Intelligential substances require,
 As doth your rational ; and both contain
 Within them every lower faculty 415
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
 For know, whatever was created needs
 To be sustain'd and fed : of elements 420
 The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,
 Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires
 Ethereal, and as lowest first the moon ;
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurged
 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 425
 Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale
 From her moist continent to higher orbs.
 The sun, that light imparts to all, receives
 From all his alimential recompense
 In humid exhalations, and at even 430
 Sups with the ocean. Though in Heaven the trees
 Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines
 Yield nectar ; though from off the boughs each morn
 We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain : yet God hath here 435
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with Heaven ; and to taste
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,
 And to their viands fell ; nor seemingly
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss 440
 Of Theologians ; but with keen despatch
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heat

PARADISE LOST.

115

To transubstantiate : what redounds transpires
 Through Spirits with ease : nor wonder ; if by fire
 Of sooty coal the empiric alchemist 445
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,
 Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,
 As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown'd : O innocence 450
 Deserving Paradise ! If ever, then,
 Then had the sons of God excuse to have been
 Enamour'd at that sight ; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
 Was understood, the injured lover's hell. 455
 Thus when with meats and drinks they had sufficed,
 Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose
 In Adam, not to let the occasion pass
 Given him by this great conference to know
 Of things above his world, and of their being 460
 Who dwell in Heaven, whose excellence he saw
 Transcend his own so far ; whose radiant forms,
 Divine effulgence, whose high power, so far
 Exceeded human ; and his wary speech
 Thus to the empyreal minister he framed : 465
 Inhabitant with God, now know I well
 Thy favour, in this honour done to Man ;
 Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsafed
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,
 Food not of Angels, yet accepted so, 470
 As that more willingly thou couldst not seem
 At Heaven's high feasts to have fed ; yet what compare ?
 To whom the winged Hierarch replied :
 O Adam, One Almighty is, from whom
 All things proceed, and up to him return, 475
 If not depraved from good, created all
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,
 Endued with various forms, various degrees
 Of substance, and, in things that live, of life ;
 But more refined, more spiritous, and pure, 480

As nearer to him placed, or nearer tending
 Each in their several active spheres assign'd,
 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds
 Proportion'd to each kind. So from the root
 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves
 More aery, last the bright consummate flower 496
 Spirit odórous breathes : flowers and their fruit,
 Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublimed,
 To vital spirits aspire, to animal,
 To intellectual ; give both life and sense, 490
 Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul
 Reason receives, and reason is her being,
 Discursive, or intuitive ; discourse
 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 495
 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
 To proper substance. Time may come, when Men
 With Angels may participate, and find
 No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare ; 500
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps
 Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,
 Improved by tract of time, and, wing'd, ascend
 Ethereal, as we ; or may, at choice,
 Here or in heavenly Paradises dwell ; 505
 If ye be found obedient, and retain
 Unalterably firm his love entire,
 Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy
 Your fill what happiness this happy state
 Can comprehend, incapable of more. 510
 To whom the patriarch of mankind replied :
 O favourable Spirit, propitious guest,
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct
 Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set
 From centre to circumference ; whereon, 515
 In contemplation of created things,
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,
 What meant that caution join'd, *If ye be found*

PARADISE LOST.

117

Obedient ? Can we want obedience then
 To him, or possibly his love desert, 500
 Who form'd us from the dust and placed us here,
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?
 To whom the Angel: Son of Heaven and Earth,
 Attend! That thou art happy, owe to God ; 505
 That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.
 This was that caution given thee ; be advised.
 God made thee perfect, not immutable ;
 And good he made thee, but to persevere 530
 He left it in thy power ; ordain'd thy will
 By nature free, not overruled by fate
 Inextricable, or strict necessity :
 Our voluntary service he requires,
 Not our necessitated ; such with him 535
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must
 By destiny, and can no other choose ?
 Myself, and all the angelic host, that stand 540
 In sight of God enthroned, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 On other surety none : freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall : 545
 And some are fallen, to disobedience fallen,
 And so from Heaven to deepest Hell ; O fall
 From what high state of bliss, into what woe !
 To whom our great progenitor : Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 550
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills
 Aerial music send : nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free ;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 555
 Our Maker, and obey him whose command

Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assured me, and still assure : though what thou tell'st
 Hath pass'd in Heaven some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 560
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins
 His other half in the great zone of Heaven. 565
 Thus Adam made request : and Raphael,
 After short pause assenting, thus began :
 High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men
 Sad task and hard : for how shall I relate
 To human sense the invisible exploits 570
 Of warring Spirits ? how, without remorse,
 The ruin of so many glorious once
 And perfect while they stood ? how last unfold
 The secrets of another world, perhaps
 Not lawful to reveal ? yet for thy good 575
 This is dispensed ; and what surmounts the reach
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
 By likening spiritual to corporeal forms,
 As may express them best ; though what if Earth
 Be but the shadow of Heaven, and things therein 580
 Each to other like, more than on earth is thought ?
 As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild
 Reign'd where these Heavens now roll, where Earth
 Upon her centre poised ; when on a day [now rests
 (For time, though in eternity, applied 585
 To motion, measures all things durable
 By present, past, and future,) on such day
 As Heaven's great year brings forth, the empyrial host
 Of Angels, by imperial summons call'd,
 Innumerable before the Almighty's throne 590
 Forthwith, from all the ends of Heaven, appear'd
 Under their Hierarchs in orders bright :
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanced,
 Standards and gonfalons 'twixt van and rear

PARADISE LOST.

Stream in the air, and for distinction serve	119
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees ;	595
Or in their 'glittering tissues bear imblazed	
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love	
Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs	
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,	600
Orb within orb, the Father Infinite,	
By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,	
Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top	
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake :	
Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light,	605
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;	
Hear my decree, which unrevoked shall stand.	
This day I have begot whom I declare	
My only Son, and on this holy hill	
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold	610
At my right hand ; your head I him appoint ;	
And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow	
All knees in Heaven, and shall confess him Lord ;	
Under his great vicegerent reign abide	
United, as one individual soul,	615
For ever happy : him who disobeys,	
Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day,	
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls	
Into utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place	
Ordain'd without redemption, without end.	620
So spake the Omnipotent, and with his words	
All seem'd well pleased ; all seem'd, but were not all.	
That day, as other solemn days, they spent	
In song and dance about the sacred hill ;	
Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere	625
Of planets, and of fix'd, in all her wheels	
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,	
Eccentric, intervolved, yet regular	
Then most, when most irregular they seem ;	
And in their motions harmony divine	630
So smooths her charming tones, that Gods own ear	
Listens delighted. Evening now approach'd	

(For we have also our evening and our morn,
 We ours for change delectable, not need ;)

Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn. 635
 Desirous : all in circles as they stood,
 Tables are set, and on a sudden piled
 With Angels' food, and rubied nectar flows
 In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold,
 Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven. 640
 On flowers reposed, and with fresh flowerets crown'd,
 They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet
 Quaff immortality and joy, secure
 Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds
 Excess, before the all bounteous King, who shower'd
 With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy. 646
 Now when ambrosial night, with clouds exhaled
 From that high mount of God whence light and shade
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heaven had changed
 To grateful twilight (for night comes not there 650
 In darker veil,) and roseate dews disposed
 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest ;
 Wide over all the plain, and wider far
 Than all this globous earth in plain outspread
 (Such are the courts of God,) the angelic throng, 655
 Dispersed in bands and files, their camp extend
 By living streams among the trees of life,
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,
 Celestial tabernacles, where they slept
 Fann'd with cool winds ; save those, who in their course,
 Melodious hymns about the sov'reign throne 661
 Alternate all night long : but not so waked
 Satan ; so call him now, his former name
 Is heard no more in Heaven ; he of the first,
 If not the first Archangel, great in power, 665
 In favour, and preeminence, yet fraught
 With envy against the Son of God, that day
 Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd
 Messiah King anointed, could not bear
 Through pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd.

PARADISE LOST.

	191
Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,	671
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour	
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolved	
With all his legions to dislodge, and leave	
Unworship'd, unobey'd, the throne supreme,	678
Contemptuous ; and his next subordinate	
Awakening, thus to him in secret spake :	
Sleep'st thou, companion dear ? What sleep can close	
Thy eyelids ? and remember'st what decree	
Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips	680
Of Heaven's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts	
Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart :	
Both waking we were one ; how then can now	
Thv sleep dissent ? new laws thou seest imposed ;	
New laws from him who reigns new minds may raise	
In us who serve, new counsels to debate	686
What doubtful may ensue : More in this place	
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou	
Of all those myriads which we lead the chief ;	
Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim night	690
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to hasto,	
And all who under me their banners wave,	
Homeward, with flying march, where we possess	
The quarters of the north ; there to prepare	
Fit entertainment to receive our king,	695
The great Messiah, and his new commands,	
Who speedily through all the hierarchies	
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.	
So spake the false Archangel, and infused	
Bad influence into the unwary breast	700
Of his associate : he together calls,	
Or several one by one, the regent Powers,	
Under him Regent ; tells, as he was taught,	
That the Most High commanding, now ere night,	
Now ere dim night had disencumber'd Heaven,	705
The great hierarchal standard was to move ;	
Tells the suggested cause, and cast between	

Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound
 Or taint integrity . but all obey'd
 The wonted signal, and superior voice 710
 Of their great Potentate ; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in Heaven ;
 His countenance, as the morning star that guides
 The starry flock, allured them, and with lies
 Drew after him the third part of Heaven's host. 715
 Meanwhile the Eternal eye, whose sight discerns
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,
 And from within the golden lamps that burn
 Nightly before him, saw without their light
 Rebellion rising ; saw in whom, how spread 720
 Among the sons of morn, what multitudes
 Were banded to oppose his high decree ;
 And, smiling, to his only Son thus said :
 Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
 In full resplendence, Heir of all my might, 725
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure
 Of our Omnipotence, and with what arms
 We mean to hold what anciently we claim
 Of deity or empire : such a foe
 Is rising, who intends to erect his throne 730
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north ;
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to try,
 In battle, what our power is, or our right . . .
 Let us advise, and to this hazard draw
 With speed what force is left, and all employ 735
 In our defence ; lest unawares we lose
 This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.
 To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear,
 Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,
 Made answer : Mighty Father, thou thy foes 740
 Justly hast in derision, and, secure,
 Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain ;
 Matter to me of glory, whom their hate
 Illustrates, when they see all regal power

PARADISE LOST.

Given me to quell their pride, and in event	123
Know whether I be dexterous to subdue	745
Thy rebels, or be found the worst in Heaven.	
So Spake the Son ; but Satan, with his Powers	
Far was advanced on winged speed ; a host	
Innumerable as the stars of night,	750
Or stars of morning, dewdrops, which the sun	
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.	
Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies	
Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones.	
In their triple degrees ; regions to which	755
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more	
Than what this garden is to all the earth	
And all the sea, from one entire globose	
Stretch'd into longitude ; which having pass'd,	
At length into the limits of the north	760
They came ; and Satan to his royal seat	
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount	
Raised on a mount, with pyramids and towers	
From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold ;	
The palace of great Lucifer (so call	765
That structure in the dialect of men	
Interpreted,) which, not long after, he	
Affecting all equality with God,	
In imitation of that mount whereon	
Messiah was declared in sight of Heaven,	770
The Mountain of the Congregation call'd ;	
For thither he assembled all his train,	
Pretending so commanded to consult	
About the great reception of their King,	
Thither to come, and with calumnious art	775
Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears :	
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;	
If these magnific titles yet remain	
Not merely titular, since by decree	
Another now hath to himself engross'd	780
All power, and us eclipsed, under the name	
Of King anointed; for whom all this haste	

Of midnight-march, and hurried meeting here,
 This only to consult how we may best,
 With what may be devised of honours new, 788
 Receive him coming to receive from us
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile!
 Too much to one! but double how endured,
 To one, and to his image now proclaim'd?
 But what if better counsels might erect 790
 Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?
 Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend
 The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust
 To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves 796
 Natives and sons of Heaven possess'd before
 By none; and if not equal all, yet free,
 Equally free; for orders and degrees
 Jar not with liberty, but well consist.
 Who can in reason then, or right, assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right 800
 His equals, if in power and splendour less,
 In freedom equal? or can introduce
 Law and edict on us, who without law
 Err not? much less for this to be our Lord,
 And look for adoration, to the abuse 806
 Of those imperial titles, which assert
 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve.
 Thus far his bold discourse without control
 Had audience; when among the Seraphim
 Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal adored 810
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,
 Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe
 The current of his fury thus opposed.
 O argument blasphemous, false, and proud!
 Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven 816
 Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,
 In place thyself so high above thy peers.
 Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn
 The just decree of God pronounced and sworn,
 That to his only Son, by right endued 820

PARADISE LOST.

125

With regal sceptre, every soul in Heaven
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
 Confess him rightful King? unjust, thou say'st,
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,
 And equal over equals to let reign, 825
 One over all with unsucceeded power.
 Shalt thou give law to God? shalt thou dispute
 With him the points of liberty, who made
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Powers of Heaven
 Such as he pleased, and circumscribed their being?
 Yet, by experience taught, we know how good, 831
 And of our good and of our dignity
 How provident he is; how far from thought
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt
 Our happy state, under one head more near 835
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,
 That equal over equals monarch reign:
 Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count,
 Or all angelic nature join'd in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son? by whom, 840
 As by his Word, the Mighty Father made
 All things, e'en thee; and all the Spirits of Heaven
 By him created in their bright degrees,
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory named
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
 Essential powers; nor by his reign obscured, 846
 But more illustrious made; since he the head
 One of our number thus reduced becomes;
 His laws our laws; all honour to him done
 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage, 850
 And tempt not these; but hasten to appease
 The incensed Father, and the incensed Son,
 While pardon may be found in time besought.
 So spake the fervent Angel: but his zeal
 None seconded, as out of season judged, 855
 Or singular and rash: Whereat rejoiced
 The Apostate, and, more haughty, thus replied:
 That we were form'd then, say'st thou? and the work

Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd
 From Father to his Son? strange point and new! 860
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who
 When this creation was? remember'st thou [saw
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 We know no time when we were not as now;
 Know none before us, self-begot, self raised 865
 By our own quickening power, when fatal course
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature
 Of this our native Heaven, ethereal sons.
 Our puissance is our own; our own right hand
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try 870
 Who is our equal: Then thou shalt behold
 Whether by supplication we intend
 Address, and to begird the almighty throne
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,
 These tidings carry to the anointed King; 875
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.
 He said: and, as the sound of waters deep,
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
 Through the infinite host; nor less for that
 The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone 880
 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold:
 O alienate from God, O Spirit accursed,
 Forsaken of all good! I see thy fall
 Determined, and thy hapless crew involved
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 885
 Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth
 No more be troubled how to quit the yoke
 Of God's Messiah; those indulgent laws
 Will not be now vouchsafed; other decrees
 Against thee are gone forth without recal; 890
 That golden sceptre which thou didst reject,
 Is now an iron rod to bruise and break
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise;
 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
 These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 895
 Ardent, raging into sudden flame,

Distinguish not : For soon expect to feel
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
Then who created thee lamenting learn,
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know. 900
So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found
Among the faithless, faithful only he ;
Among innumerable false, unmoved,
Unshaken, unseduced, unterrified,
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal ; 905
Nor number nor example with him wrought
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,
Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,
Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught ; 910
And, with retorted scorn, his back he turn'd
On those proud towers to swift destruction doom'd.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VI

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his Angels. The first fight described: Satan and his Powers retire under night: He calls a council; invents devilish engines, which, in the second day's fight, put Michael and his Angels to some disorder; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan; Yet, the tumult not so ending, God, on the third day, sends MESSIAH his son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory: He, in the power of his Father, coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of Heaven: which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep: MESSIAH returns with triumph to his Father

ALL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued, [Morn,
Through Heaven's wide champaign held his way; till
Waked by the circling Hours, with rosy hand
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne, 5
Where light and darkness in perpetual round
Lodge and dialodge by turns, which makes through
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night; [Heaven
Light issues forth, and at the other door
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10
To veil the Heaven, though darkness there might well
Seem twilight here: And now went forth the Morn
Such as in highest Heaven array'd in gold
Empyrean; from before her vanish'd Night,
Shot through with orient beams; when all the plain 15
Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright,
Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:
War he perceived, war in procinct; and found
Already known what he for news had thought 20

PARADISE LOST

129

To have reported : Gladly then he mix'd
 Among those friendly Powers, who him received
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one,
 That of so many myriads fallen, yet one
 Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill 25
 They led him high applauded, and present
 Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice,
 From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard :

↑ Servant of God, well done ; well hast thou fought
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd 30
 Against revolted multitudes the cause

Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;
 And for the testimony of truth hast borne
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear
 Than violence ; for this was all thy care 35

To stand approved in sight of God, though worlds
 Judged thee perverse : The easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,

Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart ; and to subdue 40
 By force who reason for their law refuse,
 Right reason for their law, and for their King
 Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.

Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,
 And thou, in military prowess next, 45
 Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons
 Invincible ; lead forth my armed Saints,

By thousands and by millions, ranged for fight,
 Equal in number to that Godless crew
 Rebellious: Them with fire and hostile arms 50
 Fearless assault ; and, to the brow of Heaven

Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss,
 Into their place of punishment, the gulf
 Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
 His fiery Chaos to receive their fall. 55

So spake the Sov'reign Voice, and clouds began
 To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll
 In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign

Of wrath awak'd; nor with less dread the loud
 Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow: 60
 At which command the Powers militant,
 That stood for Heaven, in mighty quadrate join'd
 Of union irresistible, moved on
 In silence their bright legions, to the sound
 Of instrumental harmony, that breathed 65
 Heroic ardour to adventurous deeds,
 Under their Godlike leaders, in the cause
 Of God and his Messiah. On they move
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,
 Nor straitening vale, nor wood, nor stream divides 70
 Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground
 Their march was, and the passive air upbore
 Their nimble tread: as when the total kind
 Of birds, in orderly array on wing,
 Came summon'd over Eden to receive 75
 Their names of thee; so over many a tract
 Of Heaven they march'd, and many a province wide,
 Tenfold the length of this terrene: At last,
 Far in the horizon to the north appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 80
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view,
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields
 Various, with boastful argument portray'd,
 The banded Powers of Satan hasting on 85
 With furious expedition; for they ween'd
 That selfsame day, by fight or by surprise,
 To win the mount of God, and on his throne
 To set the Envier of his state, the proud
 Aspirer; but their thoughts proved fond and vain 90
 In the mid way: Though strange to us it seem'd
 At first that Angel should with Angel war,
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
 So oft in festivals of joy and love
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire, 95
 Hymning the Eternal Father: but the shout

PARADISE LOST.

Of battle now began, and rushing sound	131
Of onset ended soon each milder thought.	
High in the midst, exalted as a god,	
The Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,	100
Idol of majesty divine, enclosed	
With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields ;	
Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now	
'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,	
A dreadful interval, and front to front	105
Presented stood in terrible array	
Of hideous length : Before the cloudy van,	
On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,	
Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanced,	
Came towering, arm'd in adamant and gold ;	110
Abdiel that sight endured not, where he stood	
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,	
And thus his own undaunted heart explores :	
O Heaven ! that such resemblance of the Highest	
Should yet remain, where faith and realty	115
Remain not : Wherefore should not strength and might	
There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove	
Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable ?	
His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,	
I mean to try, whose reason I have tried	120
Unsound and false ; nor is it aught but just,	
That he, who in debate of truth hath won,	
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike	
Victor ; though brutish that contest and foul	
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so	125
Most reason is that reason overcome.	
So pondering, and from his armed peers	
Forth stepping opposite, half way he met	
His daring foe, at this prevention more	
Incensed, and thus securely him defied :	130
Proud, art thou met ? thy hope was to have reach'd	
The height of thy aspiring unopposed,	
The throne of God unguarded, and his side	
Abandon'd, at the terror of thy power	

Or potent tongue : Fool ! not to think how vain 135
 Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms ;
 Who out of smallest things could, without end,
 Have raised incessant armies to defeat
 Thy folly ; or with solitary hand
 Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow, 140
 Unaided, could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
 Thy legions under darkness : but thou seest
 All are not of thy train : there be, who faith
 Prefer, and piety to God, though then
 To thee not visible, when I alone 145
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all : My sect thou seest ; now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.
 Whom the grand foe, with scornful eye advance,
 Thus answer'd : Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour 150
 Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st
 From flight, seditious Angel ! to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first assay
 Of this right hand provoked, since first that tongue,
 Inspired with contradiction, durst oppose 155
 A third part of the Gods, in synod met
 Their deities to assert ; who, while they fee!
 Vigour divine within them, can allow
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou comest
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160
 From me some plume, that thy success may show
 Destruction to the rest ; This pause between
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast,) to let thee know
 At first I thought that Liberty and Heaven
 To heavenly souls had been all one ; but now 165
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Ministering Spirits, train'd up in feast and song !
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of Heaven,
 Servility with freedom to contend,
 As both their deeds compared this day shall prove. 170
 To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied :
 Apostate ! still thou err'st, nor end wilt find

PARADISE LOST

133

Of erring, from the path of truth remote .
 Unjustly thou depravest it with the name
 Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains 175
 Or Nature : God and Nature bid the same,
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
 To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180
 Thyself not free, but to thyself enthrall'd ;
 Yet lewdly darest our ministering upbraid.
 Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom ; let me serve
 In Heaven God ever bless'd, and his divine
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd ; 185
 Yet chains in Hell; not realms, expect ; Meanwhile
 From me, return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
 This greeting on thy impious crest receive. .
 So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190
 On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,
 Such ruin intercept : Ten paces huge
 He back recoil'd ; the tenth on bended knee
 His massy spear upstaid : as if on earth 195
 Winds under ground, or waters forcing way,
 Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat,
 Half sunk with all his pines. . Amazement seized
 The rebel Thrones, but greater rage, to see
 Thus foil'd their mightiest ; ours joy fill'd, and shout,
 Presage of victory, and fierce desire 201
 Of battle's, Whereat Michael bid sound
 The Archangel trumpet ; through the vast of Heaven
 It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
 Hosanna to the Highest : Nor stood at gaze 205
 The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd
 The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
 And clamour such as heard in Heaven till now
 Was never ; arms on armour clashing bray'd
 Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210

Of brazen chariots raged ; dire was the noise
 Of conflict ; overhead the dismal hiss
 Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,
 And flying vaulted either host with fire.
 So under fiery cope together rush'd 215
 Both battles main, with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage. All Heaven
 Resounded ; and had Earth been then, all Earth
 Had to her centre shook. What wonder ? when
 Millions of fierce encountering Angels fought 220
 On either side, the least of whom could wield
 These elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their regions : How much more of Power
 Army against army numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 225
 Though not destroy, their happy native seat ;
 Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent,
 From his strong hold of Heaven, high overruled
 And limited their might ; though number'd such
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 230
 A numerous host ; in strength each armed hand
 A legion ? led in fight, yet leader seem'd
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 235
 The ridges of grim war : No thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
 That argued fear ; each on himself relied,
 As only in his arm the moment lay
 Of victory : Deeds of eternal fame 240
 Were done, but infinite ; for wide was spread
 That war, and various ; sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight, then, soaring on main wing,
 Tormented all the air ; all air seem'd then
 Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale 245
 The battle hung ; till Satan, who that day
 Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms
 No equal, ranging through the dire attack

Of fighting Seraphim confused, at length
 Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd 250
 Squadrons at once ; with huge two-handed sway
 Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down
 Wide wasting ; such destruction to withstand
 He hasted, and opposed the rocky orb
 Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield, 255
 A vast circumference. At his approach
 The great Archangel from his warlike toil
 Surceased, and glad as hoping here to end
 Intestine war in Heaven, the archfoe subdued
 Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown 260
 And visage all inflamed first thus began :
 Author of evil unknown till thy revolt
 Unnamed in Heaven, now plenteous as thou seest
 These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
 Though heaviest by just measure on thyself, 265
 And thy adherents : How hast thou disturb'd
 Heaven's blessed peace, and into nature brought
 Misery, uncreated till the crime
 Of thy rebellion ! how hast thou instill'd
 Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270
 And faithful, now proved false ! But think not here
 To trouble holy rest ; Heaven casts thee out
 From all her confines. Heaven, the seat of bliss,
 Brooks not the works of violence and war.
 Hence then, and evil go with thee along, 275
 Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell ;
 Thou and thy wicked crew ! there mingle broils,
 Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,
 Or some more sudden vengeance, wing'd from God,
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain. 280
 So spake the Prince of Angels ; to whom thus
 The Adversary. Nor think thou with wind
 Of airy threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise 285
 Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me

That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence ? err not, that so shall end
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style
 The strife of glory ; which we mean to win, 290
 Or turn this Heaven itself into the Hell
 Thou fablest ; here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign : Meanwhile thy utmost force,
 And join him named Almighty to thy aid,
 I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh. 295
 They ended parle, and both address'd for fight
 Unspeakable ; for who, though with the tongue
 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things
 Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift
 Human imagination to such height 300
 Of Godlike power ? for likest Gods they seem'd ;
 Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,
 Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.
 Now waved their fiery swords, and in the air
 Made horrid circles ; two broad suns their shields 305
 Blazed opposite, while Expectation stood
 In horror : From each band with speed retired,
 Where erst was thickest fight, the angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion ; such as, to set forth 310
 Great things by small, if, nature's concord broke,
 Among the constellations war were sprung,
 Two planets, rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.
 Together both with next to almighty arm 315
 Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd
 That might determine, and not need repeat,
 As not of power at once ; nor odds appear'd
 In might or swift prevention : But the sword 320
 Of Michael from the armory of God
 Was given him temper'd so that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge : it met
 The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite

PARADISE LOST.

137

Descending, and in half cut sheer ; nor staid, 325
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep entering, shared
 All his right side : Then Satan first knew pain,
 And writhed him to and fro convolved ; so sore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound
 Pass'd through him : But the ethereal substance closed,
 Not long divisible ; and from the gash 331
 A stream of nectarous humour issuing flow'd
 Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,
 And all his armour stained, erewhile so bright.
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run 335
 By Angels many and strong, who interposed
 Defence, while others bore him on their shields
 Back to his chariot, where it stood retired
 From off the files of war : There they him laid
 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame, 340
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
 Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath
 His confidence to equal God in power.
 Yet soon he heal'd ; for Spirits that live throughout
 Vital in every part, not as frail man 345
 In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,
 Cannot but by annihilating die ;
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
 Receive, no more than can the fluid air :
 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350
 All intellect, all sense ; and, as they please,
 They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.
 Meanwhile in other parts like deeds deserved
 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought, 355
 And with fierce ensigns pierced the deep array
 Of Moloch, furious king ; who him defied,
 And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous ; but anon 360
 Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing

134
 Of *Rivul* and *Rapuel*, his vaunting foe,
 Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,
 Of *Adramalech*, and *Aznadai*, 365
 Two potent Thrones, that to be less than Gods
 Of *Thudal*, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,
 Mangled with ghastly wounds through plate and mail,
 Nor stood unmindful *Abdiel* to annoy
 The stoutest crew, but with redoubled blow 370
 Of *Arcton*, and the violence
 Of *Laussel* scorch'd and blasted, overthrow.
 And the state of thousands, and their names
 Were here on earth; but those elect
 Contented with their fame in Heaven, 375
 Seek the praise of men: The other sort,
 Though wondrous and in acts of war,
 Unknown less eager, yet by doom
 From Heaven and sacred memory,
 In dark oblivion let them dwell. 380
 From truth divided, and from just,
 Their sought merits but dispraise
 And ignominy: yet to glory aspires
 Ambitious, and through infamy seeks fame.
 To cease eternal silence be their doom. 385
 And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerved,
 In many an inroad gored: deformed rout
 And foul disorder: all the ground
 With sliver'd armour strown, and on a heap 390
 Of *Arcton* and *Charoteer* lay overturn'd,
 And *Sory-foaming steeds*: what stood recoil'd
 Or wearied, through the faint Satanic host
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surprised,
 First with fear surprised, and sense of pain,
 And agonious, to such evil brought 395
 By sin of disobedience: till that hour
 Not liable to fear or flight or pain.
 Likewise the inviolable Saints
 As *Alaux* firm, advanced entire,
 Not impenetrably arm'd; 400

Such high advantages their innocence
 Gave them above their foes ; not to have sinn'd,
 Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
 By wound, though from their place by violence moved.

Now night her course began, and, over Heaven 406

Inducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,
 And silence on the odious din of war :
 Under her cloudy covert both retired,
 Victor and vanquish'd : On the foughthen field 410
 Michaël and his Angels prevalent

Encamping, placed in guard their watches round,
 Cherubic waving fires : On the other part,
 Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,
 Far in the dark dislodged ; and, void of rest, 415
 His potentates to council call'd by night ;
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began :

O now in danger tried, now known in arms
 Not to be overpower'd, Companions dear,
 Found worthy not of liberty alone, 420

Too mean pretence ! but what we more affect,
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight,
 (And if one day, why not eternal days ?)
 What Heaven's Lord had powerfulest to send 425

Against us from about his throne, and judg'd
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,
 But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,
 Of future we may deem him, though till now
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430

Some disadvantage we endured and pain,
 Till now not known, but, known, as soon condemn'd ;
 Since now we find this our empyreal form
 Incapable of mortal injury,
 Imperishable, and, though pierced with wound, 435
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.

Of evil then so small as easy think
 The remedy ; perhaps more valid arms

Weapons more violent, when next we meet,
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440
 Or equal what between us made the odds,

In nature none: If other hidden cause
 Left them superior, while we can preserve
 Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,
 Due search and consultation will disclose. 445

He sat; and in the assembly next upstood
 Nisroch, of Principalities the prime;
 As one he stood escaped from cruel fight,
 Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havoc hewn,
 And cloudy in aspect thus answering spake: 450

Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free
 Enjoyment of our right as Gods: yet hard
 For Gods, and too unequal work we find,
 Against unequal arms to fight in pain,

Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil 455
 Ruin must needs ensue; for what avails

Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain,
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands

Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460

But live content, which is the calmest life:

But pain is perfect misery, the worst

Of evils, and, excessive, overturns

All patience. He, who therefore can invent

With what more forcible we may offend 465

Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm

Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves

No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look composed Satan replied:

Not uninvited that, which thou aright 470

Believest so main to our success, I bring.

Which of us who beholds the bright surface

Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,

This continent of spacious Heaven, adorn'd

With plant, fruit, flower ambrosial, gems, and gold;

Whose eye so superficially surveys 476

These things, as not to mind from whence they grow
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
 Of spirituous and fiery spume, till touch'd
 With Heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth 490
 So beauteous, opening to the ambient light ?
 These in their dark nativity the deep
 Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame ;
 Which, into hollow engines, long and round,
 Thick ramm'd, at the other bore with touch of fire 495
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth
 From far, with thundering noise, among our foes
 Such implements of mischief as shall dash
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd 490 X
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive ;
 Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel join'd
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd. 495
 He ended, and his words their drooping cheer
 Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope revived.
 The invention all admired, and each, how he
 To be the inventor miss'd ; so easy it seem'd [thought
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have
 Impossible : Yet haply of thy race 501
 In future days, if malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspired
 With devilish machination, might devise
 Like instrument to plague the sons of men 505
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from council to the work they flew ;
 None arguing stood ; innumerable hands
 Were ready ; in a moment up they turn'd
 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath 510
 The originals of nature in their crude
 Conception ; sulphurous and nitrous foam
 They found, they mingled, and, with subtle art,
 Concocted and adjusted, they reduced

To blackest grain, and into store convey'd : 515
 Part hidden veins digged up (nor hath this earth
 Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,
 Whereof to found their engines and their balls
 Of missive run ; part incentive reed
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire, 520
 So all ere dayspring, under conscious night,
 Secret they finish'd, and in order set,
 With silent circumspection, unespied.

Now when fair morn orient in Heaven appear'd,
 Up rose the victor-Angels, and to arms 535
 The matin trumpet sung : in arms they stood
 Of golden panoply, refulgent host,
 Soon banded ; others from the dawning hills
 Look round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,
 Each quarter to descry the distant foe, 540
 Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,
 In motion or in halt : Him soon they met
 Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
 But firm battalion : back with speediest sail
 Zophiel, or Cherubim the swiftest wing, 545
 Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried -

Arm, Warriors, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
 This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud
 He comes, and settled in his face I see 550
 Sad resolution, and secure : Let each
 His adamantine coat gird well, and each
 Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,
 Borne even or high ; for this day will pour down,
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower, 545
 But rattling storms of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon
 In order, quit of all impediment ;
 Instant without disturb they took alarm,
 And onward moved embattled : When behold ! 550
 Not distant far with heavy pace the foe
 Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube

PARADISE LOST.

143

Training his devilish enginery, impaled
 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555
 Awhile ; but suddenly at head appear'd
 Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud :
 Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek
 Peace and composure, and with open breast 560
 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse ;
 But that I doubt ; however witness, Heaven !
 Heaven, witness thou anon ! while we discharge
 Freely our part : ye, who appointed stand, 565
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear !
 So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
 Had ended ; when to right and left the front
 Divided, and to either flank retired : 570
 Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,
 A triple mounted row of pillars laid
 On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,
 Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,
 With branches lopp'd, in wood or mountain fell'd,) 575
 Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths
 With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,
 Portending hollow truce : At each behind
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed
 Stood waving tipp'd with fire : while we, suspense, 580
 Collected stood within our thoughts amused,
 Not long : for sudden all at once their reeds
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied
 With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame, 584
 But soon obscured with smoke, all Heaven appear'd,
 From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose roar
 Embowel'd with outrageous noise the air,
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
 Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail
 Of iron globes ; which, on the victor host 590

Level'd, with such impetuous fury smote,
 That, whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,
 Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell
 By thousands, Angel on Archangel roll'd ;
 The sooner for their arms ; unarm'd, they might 595

Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift
 By quick contraction or remove ; but now
 Foul dissipation follow'd, and forced rout ;
 Nor served it to relax their serried files.
 What should they do ? if on they rush'd, repulse 600

Repeated, and indecent overthrow
 Doubled, would render them yet more despised,
 And to their foes a laughter ; for in view
 Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,
 In posture to displode their second tire 605
 Of thunder : Back defeated to return
 They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,
 And to his mates thus in derision call'd :

O Friends ! why come not on these victors proud ?
 Ere while they fierce were coming ; and when we 610
 To entertain them fair with open front
 And breast, (what could we more ?) propounded terms
 Of composition, straight they changed their minds,
 Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
 As they would dance ; yet for a dance they seem'd 615
 Somewhat extravagant and wild ; perhaps
 For joy of offer'd peace : But I suppose
 If our proposals once again were heard,
 We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood : 620
 Leader ! the terms we sent were terms of weight,
 Of hard contents, and full of force urged home,
 Such as we might perceive amused them all,
 And stumbled many : Who receives them right
 Had need from head to foot well understand ; 625
 Not understood, this gift they have besides,
 They show us when our foes walk not upright.
 So they among themselves in pleasant vein

PARADISE LOST.

145

Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond
 All doubt of victory : Eternal Might 630
 To match with their inventions they presumed
So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,
 And all his host derided, while they stood
 Awhile in trouble : But they stood not long ;
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
 Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose. 636
 Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,
 Which God hath in his mighty Angels placed !)
 Their arms away they throw, and to the hills
 (For Earth hath this variety from Heaven 640
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale,)
Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew ;
 From their foundations loosening to and fro,
 They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops 645
 Uplifting bore them in their hands : Amaze,
Be sure, and terror seized the rebel host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd ;
 Till on those cursed engines' triple-row 650
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep ;
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
 Main promontories flung, which in the air 654
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd ;
 Their armour helped their harm, crush'd in and bruised
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan ;
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light, 660
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest, in imitation, to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore :
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire ; 665
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade ;

Infernal noise ! war seem'd a civil game
To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd
Upon confusion rose : and now all Heaven
Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread ; 670
Had not the Almighty Father, where he sits
Shrined in his sanctuary of Heaven secure,
Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd :
That his great purpose he might so fulfil, 675
To honour his anointed Son avenged
Upon his enemies, and to declare
All power on him transferr'd : whence to his Son,
The Assessor of his throne, he thus began :
Effulgence of my glory, Son beloved, 680
Son, in whose face invisible is beheld
Visibly what by Deity I am ;
And in whose hand what by decree I do,
Second Omnipotence ! two days are pass'd,
Two days, as we compute the days of Heaven, 685
Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame
These disobedient : sore hath been their fight,
As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd ,
For to themselves I left them ; and thou know'st,
Equal in their creation they were form'd, 690
Save what sin hath impair'd ; which yet hath wrought
Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;
Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last
Endless, and no solution will be found :
War wearied hath perform'd what war can do, 695
And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,
With mountains, as with weapons, arm'd ; which makes
Wild work in Heaven, and dangerous to the main.
Two days are therefore pass'd, the third is thine ;
For thee I have ordain'd it ; and thus far 700
Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine
Of ending this great war, since none but Thou
Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace
Immense I have transfused that all may know

In Heaven and Hell thy power above compare ; 705
 And, this perverse commotion govern'd thus,
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir
 Of all things ; to be Heir, and to be King
 By sacred unction, thy deserved right.
 Go then, Thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might ; 710
 Ascend my chariot; guide the rapid wheels
 That shake Heaven's basis, bring forth all my war,
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh ;
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out 715
 From all Heaven's bounds into the utter deep :
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
 God, and Messiah his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with rays direct
 Shone full ; he all his Father full express'd 720
 Ineffably into his face received ;

And thus the Filial Godhead answering spake :

O Father, O Supreme of heavenly Thrones,
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best ; thou always seek'st
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee, 725
 As is most just : this I my glory account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
 That thou, in me well pleased, declarest thy will
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.

Sceptre and power, thy giving, I assume, 730
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee

For ever ; and in me all whom thou lovest :
 But whom thou batest I hate, and can put on
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on, 735

Image of thee in all things ; and shall soon,
 Arm'd with thy might, rid Heaven of these rebell'd ,
 To their prepared ill mansion driven down,
 To chains of darkness, and the undying worm ;
 That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.

Then shall thy Saints unmix'd, and from the impure

Far separate, circling thy holy mount,
 Unfeign'd Hallelujahs to thee sing,
 Hymns of high praise, and I among them Chief. 745
 So said, ne, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose
 From the right hand of Glory where he sat ;
 And the third sacred morn began to shine, [sound,
 Dawning through Heaven. Forth rush'd with whirlwind
 The chariot of Paternal Deity, 750
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,
 Itself instinct with Spirit, but convoy'd
 By four Cherubic shapes ; four faces each
 Had wondrous ; as with stars, their bodies all
 And wings were set with eyes ; with eyes the wheels
 Of beryl, and careering fires between ; 755
 Over their heads a crystal firmament,
 Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure
 Amber, and colours of the showery arch.
 He, in celestial panoply all arm'd 760
 Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,
 Ascended ; at his right hand Victory
 Sat eagle-winged ; beside him hung his bow .
 And quiver with three-bolted thunder stored ;
 And from about him fierce effusion roll'd 765
 Of smoke and bickering flame and sparkles dire :
 Attended with ten thousand Saints,
 He onward came ; far off his coming shone ;
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)
 Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen ; 770
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime
 On the crystalline sky, in sapphire throned,
 Illustrious far and wide ; but by his own
 First seen ; them unexpected joy surpris'd,
 When the great ensign of Messiah blazed 775
 Aloft by Angels borne, his sign in Heaven ;
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduced
 His army, circumfused on either wing,
 Under their Head embodied all in one.
 Before him Power Divine his way prepared ; 780

PARADISE LOST.

143

At his command the uprooted hills retired
 Each to his place ; they heard his voice, and went
 Obsequious ; Heaven his wonted face renew'd,
 And with fresh flowerets hill and valley smiled.
 This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdured, 785
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers,
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.
 In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell ?
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,
 Or wonders move the obdurate to relent ? 790
 They, harden'd more by what might most reclaim,
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight
 Took envy ; and, aspiring to his height,
 Stood reembattled fierce, by force or fraud
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail 795
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall
 In universal ruin last ; and now
 To final battle drew, disdainng flight,
 Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of God
 To all his host on either hand thus spake : 800
 Stand still in bright array, ye Saints ; here stand,
 Ye Angels arm'd ; this day from battle rest :
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause ;
 And as ye have received, so have ye done, 805
 Invincibly : but of this cursed crew
 The punishment to other hand belongs ;
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints :
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,
 Nor multitude ; stand only, and behold 810
 God's indignation on these godless pour'd
 By me ; not you, but me they have despised,
 Yet envied ; against me is all their rage,
 Because the Father, to whom in Heaven supreme
 Kingdom and power and glory appertains, 815
 Hath honour'd me, according to his will.
 Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd ;
 That they may have their wish, to ~~try~~ with me

In battle which the stronger proves ; they all,
 Or I alone against them ; since by strength 830
 They measure all, of other excellence
 Not emulous, nor care who them excels ;
 Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terror changed
 His countenance too severe to be beheld, 835
 And full of wrath bent on his enemies.

At once the Four spread out their starry wings
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
 Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound
 Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830

He on his impious foes right onward drove,
 Gloomy as night ; under his burning wheels
 The steadfast empyrean shook throughout,
 All but the throne itself of God. Full soon
 Among them he arrived ; in his right hand 835

Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent
 Before him, such as in their souls infix'd
 Plagues : they, astonish'd, all resistance lost,
 All courage ; down their idle weapons dropp'd :
 O'er shields and helms and helmed heads he rode 840

Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
 That wish'd the mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visaged Four 845

Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes ;
 One Spirit in them ruled ; and every eye
 Glared lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire
 Among the accursed, that wither'd all their strength,
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd, 851
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fallen.

Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 His thunder in mid volley ; for he meant
 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven : 855
 The overthrown he raised ; and, as a herd

PARADISE LOST. 151

Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd,
 Drove them before him thunderstruck, pursued
 With terrors, and with furies, to the bounds
 And crystal wall of Heaven: which, opening wide, 860
 Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclosed
 Into the wasteful deep: the monstrous sight
 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse
 Urged them behind: headlong themselves they threw
 Down from the verge of Heaven; eternal wrath 865
 Burn'd after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard the unsufferable noise, Hell saw
 Heaven ruining from Heaven, and would have fled
 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870
 Nine days they fell: confounded Chaos roar'd,
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout
 Encumber'd him with ruin: Hell at last
 Yawning received them whole, and on them closed;
 Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire 876
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.
 Disburden'd Heaven rejoiced, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.
 Sole victor, from the expulsion of his foes, 880
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd:
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,
 With jubilee advanced; and, as they went,
 Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright 883
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion given,
 Worthiest to reign: He, celebrated, rode
 Triumphant through mid Heaven, into the courts
 And temple of his Mighty Father throned 890
 On high; who into glory him received,
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss. [Earth,
 Thus, measuring things in Heaven by things on
 At thy request, and that thou mayst beware

104	P ADISE LOST.	B. VI.
	By what is pass'd, to thee I have reveal'd	895
	What might have else to human race been hid ;	
	The discord which befel, and war in Heaven	
	Among the angelic Powers, and the deep fall	
	Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd	
	With Satan ; he who envies now thy state,	900
	Who now is plotting how he may seduce	
	Thee also from obedience, that, with him	
	Bereaved of happiness, thou mayst partake	
	His punishment, eternal misery ;	
	Which would be all his solace and revenge,	905
	As a despite done against the Host High,	
	Thee once to gain companion of his woe.	
	But listen not to his temptations, warn	
	Thy weaker : let it profit thee to have heard,	
	By terrible example, the reward	910
	Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,	
	Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress.	

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VII.

Raphael, at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory, and attendance of Angels, to perform the work of Creation in six days: the Angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into Heaven.

DESCEND from Heaven, Urania, by that name
If rightly thou art call'd; whose voice divine
Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,
Above the flight of Pegasus wing!
The meaning, not the name, I call: for thou 5
Nor of the Muses nam'd, nor on the top
Of old Olympus dwell'st; but heavenly born,
Before the hills appear'd or fountain flow'd,
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play 10
In presence of the Almighty Father, pleas'd
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee
Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presumed,
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,
Thy tempering: with like safety guided down 15
Return me to my native element:
Lest from this flying steed unrein'd (as once
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime,
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,
Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn. 20
Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound
Within the visible diurnal sphere;
Standing on earth, not wrapp'd above the pole,

More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged
 To hoarse or mute, though fallen on evil days, 25
 On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues;
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou
 Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn
 Purples the east: still govern thou my song, 30
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance
 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard
 In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears 35
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd
 Both harp and voice, nor could the Muse defend
 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores
 For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.
 Say, Goddess, what ensued when Raphael, 40
 The affable Archangel, had forewarn'd
 Adam, by dire example, to beware
 Apostacy, by what befel in Heaven
 To those apostates: lest the like befal
 In Paradise to Adam or his race, 45
 Charged not to touch the interdicted tree,
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,
 So easily obey'd amid the choice
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,
 Though wandering. He, with his consorted Eve, 50
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration, and deep muse, to hear
 Of things so high and strange; things, to their thought
 So unimaginable, as hate in Heaven,
 And war so near the peace of God in bliss, 55
 With such confusion: but the evil, soon
 Driven back, redounded as a flood on those
 From whom it sprang; impossible to mix
 With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd
 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now 60
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know

PARADISE LOST.

155

What nearer might concern him, how this world
 Of Heaven and Earth conspicuous first began ;
 When, and whereof created ; for what cause ;
 What within Eden, or without, was done 65
 Before his memory ; as one whose droneth
 Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,
 Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,
 Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest.
 Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70
 Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,
 Divine interpreter ! by favour sent
 Down from the empyrean, to forewarn
 Us timely of what might else have been our loss,
 Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach :
 For which to the infinitely Good we owe 76
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
 Receive, with solemn purpose to observe
 Immutably his sov'reign will, the end
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsafed 80
 Gently, for our instruction, to impart
 Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avail us known, 85
 How first began this Heaven which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd
 Innumerable ; and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient are wide interfused
 Embracing round this florid Earth ; what cause 90
 Moved the Creator, in his holy rest
 Through all eternity, so late to build
 In Chaos ; and, the work begun, how soon
 Absolved ; if unforbid thou mayst unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 95
 Of his eternal empire, but the more
 To magnify his works, the more we know.
 And the great light of day yet wants to run

Much of his race though steep ; suspense in Heaven,
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 100
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 His generation, and the rising birth
 Of Nature from the unapparent Deep :
 Or if the star of evening and the moon
 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring 105
 Silence ; and Sleep, listening to thee, will watch ;
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy song
 End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.
 Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought :
 And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild : 110
 This also thy request, with caution ask'd,
 Obtain ; though to recount almighty works
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve 115
 To glorify the Maker, and infer
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld
 Thy hearing ; such commission from above
 I have received, to answer thy desire
 Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond, abstain 120
 To ask ; nor let thine own inventions hope
 Things not reveal'd, which the invisible King,
 Only Omniscient, hath suppress'd in night ;
 To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :
 Enough is left besides to search and know. 125
 But knowledge is as food, and needs no less
 Her temperance over appetite, to know
 In measure what the mind may well contain ;
 Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns
 Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. 130
 Know then, that, after Lucifer from Heaven
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the host
 Of Angels than that star the stars among,)
 Fell with his flaming legions through the deep
 Into his place : and the great Son return'd 135

PARADISE LOST.

157

Victorious with his Saints, the Omnipotent
Eternal Father from his throne beheld
Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake :

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140

This inaccessible high strength, the seat
Of Deity supreme, us disposess'd,

He trusted to have seized, and into fraud
Drew many, whom their place knows here no more :

Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 145
Their station ; Heaven, yet populous, retains
Number sufficient to possess her realms

Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
With ministeries due and solemn rites ;

But, lest his heart exalt him in the harm 150
Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven,
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair

That detriment, if such it be to lose
Self-lost ; and in a moment will create

Another world, out of one man a race 155
Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
Not here : till, by degrees of merit rais'd,

They open to themselves at length the way
Up hither, under long obedience tried ;

And Earth be changed to Heaven, and Heaven to Earth
One kingdom, joy and union without end. 161

Meanwhi'e inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heaven ;
And thou my Word, begotten Son ; by thee

This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done !
My overshadowing Spirit and Might with thee 165

I send along ; ride forth, and bid the Deep
Within appointed bounds be Heaven and Earth ,

Boundless the Deep, because I Am who fill
Infinite, nor vacuous the space.

Though I, uncircumscrib'd myself, retire, 170
And, put not forth my goodness, which is free
To act or not, Necessity and Chance

Approach not me, and what I will is Fate.

So spake the Almighty, and to what he spake
 His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect. 175
 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift
 Than time or motion, but to human ears
 Cannot without process of speech be told,
 So told as earthly notion can receive.
 Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven, 180
 When such was heard declared the Almighty's will ;
 Glory they sung to the Most High, good will
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace ;
 Glory to Him, whose just avenging ire
 Had driven out the ungodly from his sight 185
 And the habitations of the just ; to Him
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd
 Good out of evil to create ; instead
 Of Spirits malign, a better race to bring
 Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse 190
 His good to worlds and ages infinite.
 So sang the Hierarchies : meanwhile the Son
 On his great expedition now appear'd,
 Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crown'd
 Of Majesty Divine ; sapience and love 195
 Immense, and all his Father in him shone.
 About his chariot numberless were pour'd
 Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,
 And Virtues, winged Spirits, and chariots wing'd
 From the armory of God ; where stand of old 200
 Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodged
 Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,
 Celestial equipage ; and now came forth
 Spontaneous, for within them Spirit lived,
 Attendant on their Lord : Heaven open'd wide 205
 Her ever during gates, harmonious sound,
 On golden hinges moving. to let forth
 The King of Glory, in his powerful Word
 And Spirit coming to create new worlds.
 On heavenly ground they stood ; and from the shore
 They view'd the vast immeasurable abyss 211

PARADISE LOST.

159

Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds
 And surging waves, as mountains, to assault 214
 Heaven's height, and with the centre mix the pole.

Silence, ye troubled Waves, and, thou Deep, peace,
 Said then the Omnific Word ; your discord end !

Nor staid ; but, on the wings of Cherubim
 Uplifted, in paternal glory rode
 Far into Chaos, and the world unborn ; 220

For Chaos heard his voice : Him all his train
 Follow'd in bright procession, to behold
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.

Then staid the fervid wheels, and in his hand
 He took the golden compasses, prepared 225

In God's eternal store, to circumscribe
 This universe, and all created things :

One foot he centred, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profundity obscure ;
 And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 230

This be thy just circumference, O World !
 Thus God the Heaven created, thus the Earth,

Matter unform'd and void : darkness profound
 Cover'd the abyss : but on the watery calm

His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread, 235
 And vital virtue infused, and vital warmth

Throughout the fluid mass ; but downward purged
 The black tartareous cold infernal dregs,

Adverse to life : then founded, then conglobed
 Like things to like ; the rest to several place 240

Disparted, and between spun out the air ;
 And Earth self-balanced on her centre hung.

Let there be Light, said God ; and forthwith Light
 Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,

Sprung from the deep ; and from her native east 245
 To journey through the aery gloom began,

Sphered in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun
 Was not ; she in a cloudy tabernacle

Sojourn'd the while. God saw the light was good,

And light from darkness by the hemisphere 260
 Divided : light the Day, and darkness Night,
 He named. Thus was the first day even and morn -
 Nor pass'd uncelebrated, nor unsung
 By the celestial choirs, when orient light
 Exhaling first from darkness they beheld ; 265
 Birthday of Heaven and Earth ; with joy and shout
 The hollow universal orb they fill'd,
 And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning praised
 God and his works ; Creator him they sung,
 Both when first evening was, and when first morn. 260
 Again, God said, Let there be firmament
 Amid the waters, and let it divide
 The waters from the waters ; and God made
 The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,
 Transparent, elemental air, diffused 265
 In circuit to the uttermost convex
 Of this great round ; partition firm and sure,
 The waters underneath from those above
 Dividing : for as earth, so he the world
 Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide 270
 Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule
 Of Chaos far removed ; lest fierce extremes
 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame :
 And Heaven he named the Firmament : so even
 And morning chorus sung the second day. 275
 The Earth was form'd, but, in the womb as yet
 Of waters, embryo immature involved,
 Appear'd not : over all the face of Earth
 Main ocean flow'd, not idle ; but, with warm
 Prolific humour softening all her globe, 280
 Fertilized the great mother to conceive,
 Sate with genial moisture ; when God said,
 Be gather'd now, ye waters under Heaven,
 Into one place, and let dry land appear.
 Immediately the mountains huge appear 285
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
 Into the clouds ; their tops ascend the sky ;

PARADISE LOST.

161

So high as heaved the tumid hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
 Capacious bed of waters : thither they 290
 Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd,
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry :
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd
 On the swift floods : as armies at the call 295
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to their standard ; so the watery throng,
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,
 Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill ; 300
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With serpent error wandering, found their way,
 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,
 All but within those banks, where rivers now 305
 Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.
 The dry land Earth, and the great receptacle
 Of-congregated waters he call'd Seas :
 And saw that it was good ; and said, Let the Earth
 Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 310
 And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,
 Whose seed is in herself upon the Earth.
 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then
 Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,
 Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad 315
 Her universal face with pleasant green ;
 Then herbs of évery leaf, that sudden flower'd
 Opening their various colours, and made gay
 Her bosom, smelling sweet : and, these scarce blown,
 Forth flourish'd thick the clustering vine, forth crept
 The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed 321
 Embattled in her field, and the humble shrub,
 And bush with frizzled hair implicit : last
 Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread
 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd 325

Their blossoms : with high woods the hills were crown'd ;
 With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side ;
 With borders long the rivers : the Earth now
 Seem'd like to Heaven, a seat where Gods might dwell,
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330
 Her sacred shades : though God had yet not rain'd
 Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground
 None was ; but from the Earth a dewy mist
 Went up, and water'd all the ground, and each
 Plant of the field ; which, ere it was in the Earth, 335
 God made, and every herb, before it grew
 On the green stem : God saw that it was good :
 So even and morn recorded the third day.

Again the Almighty spake, Let there be lights 340
 High in the expanse of Heaven, to divide
 The day from night ; and let them be for signs,
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years ;
 And let them be for lights, as I ordain
 Their office in the firmament of Heaven,
 To give light on the Earth ; and it was so. 345
 And God made two great lights, great for their use
 To Man, the greater to have rule by day,
 The less by night, altern ; and made the stars,
 And set them in the firmament of Heaven
 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the day 350
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night,
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,
 Surveying his great work, that it was good :
 For of celestial bodies first the sun
 A mighty spheré he framed, unlightsome first, 355
 Though of ethereal mould : then form'd the moon
 Globose, and every magnitude of stars,
 And sow'd with stars the Heaven, thick as a field :
 Of light by far the greater part he took,
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd 360
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive
 And drink the liquid light ; firm to retain
 Her gather'd beams, great palace new of light.

PARADISE LOST. 163

Hither, as to their fountain, other stars
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light, 365
 And hence the morning planet gilds her horns ;
 By tincture or reflection they augment
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight
 So far remote, with diminution seen.
 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, 370
 Regent of day, and all the horizon round
 Invested with bright rays, bound to run
 His longitude through Heaven's high road ; the gray
 Dawn and the Ploïades before him danced,
 Shedding sweet influence : less bright the moon, 375
 But opposite in level'd west was set,
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light
 From him ; for other light she needed none
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps
 Till night ; then in the east her turn she shines, 380
 Revolved on Heaven's great axle, and her reign
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd
 Spangling the hemisphere : then first adorn'd
 With their bright luminaries that set and rose, 385
 Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.
 And God said, Let the waters generate
 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul :
 And let fowl fly above the Earth, with wings
 Display'd on the open firmament of Heaven. 390
 And God created the great whales, and each
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
 The waters generated by their kinds ;
 And every bird of wing after his kind ;
 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas 395
 And lakes and running streams the waters fill ;
 And let the fowl be multiplied on the Earth.
 Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,
 With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 400
 Of fish that with their fins and shining scales

Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft
 Bank the mid sea : part single, or with mate,
 Graze the seaweed their pasture, and through groves
 Of coral stray ; or, sporting with quick glance, 405
 Show to the sun their waved coats dropp'd with gold ;
 Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend
 Moist nutriment ; or under rocks their food
 In jointed armour watch : on smooth the seal
 And bended dolphins play, part huge of bulk 410
 Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,
 Tempest the ocean : there leviathan,
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
 Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps or swims,
 And seems a moving land ; and at his gills 415
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.
 Meanwhile the tepid caves and fens and shores
 Their brood as numerous hatch, from the egg that soon
 Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclosed 419
 Their callow young ; but feather'd soon and fledgèd
 They summ'd their pens ; and, soaring the air sublime,
 With clang despised the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect ; there the eagle and the stork
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build :
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise 425
 In common, ranged in figure, wedge their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their aery caravan, high over seas
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing
 Easing their flight ; so steers the prudent crane 430
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds ; the air
 Floats as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes :
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song
 Solaced the woods, and spread their painted wings
 Till even ; nor then the solemn nightingale 435
 Ceased warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays :
 Others, on silver lakes and rivers, bathed
 Their downy breast ; the swan with arched neck,
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows

PARADISE LOST.

165

Her state with oary feet ; yet oft they quit 440
 The dark, and rising on stiff pennons, tower
 The mid aerial sky : others on ground
 Walk'd firm ; the crested cock whose clarion sounds
 The silent hours, and the other whose gay train
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue 445
 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,
 Evening and morn solemnly the fifth day.
 The sixth, and of creation last, arose
 With evening harps and ~~music~~ when God said. 450
 Let the Earth bring forth soul living in her kind.
 Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of the Earth,
 Each in their kind. The Earth obey'd, and straight
 Opening her fertile womb teem'd at a birth
 Innumeros living creatures, perfect forms. 455
 Limb'd and full grown : out of the ground uprose,
 As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;
 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 460
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.
 The grassy clods now calved ; now half appear'd
 The tawny lion, pawing to get free
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds, 465
 And rampant shakes his brinded mane ; the ounce,
 The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw
 In hillocks : the swift stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head : scarce from his mould 470
 Behemoth biggest born of earth upheaved
 His vastness : fleeced the flocks and bleating roas,
 As plants : ambiguous between sea and land
 The river-horse, and scaly crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground, 475
 Insect or worm : those waved their limber fans
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact

In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride
 With spots of gold and purple, azure and green :
 These, as a line, their long dimension draw, 480
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all
 Minims of nature ; some of serpent kind,
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involved
 Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept
 The parsimonious emmet, provident 485
 Of future ; in small room large heart enclosed ;
 Pattern of just equality perhaps
 Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes
 Of commonalty : swarming next appear'd
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 490
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells
 With honey stored : the rest are numberless,
 And thou their natures know'st, and gavest them names,
 Needless to thee repeated ; nor unknown
 The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field, 495
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 And hairy mane terrific, though to thee
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.
 Now Heaven in all her glory shone, and roll'd
 Her motions, as the great first Mover's hand 500
 First wheel'd their course : Earth in her rich attire
 Consummate lovely smiled ; air, water, earth,
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd,
 Frequent ; and of the sixth day yet remain'd :
 There wanted yet the master-work, the end 505
 Of all yet done : a creature, who, not prone
 And brute as other creatures, but endued
 With sanctity of reason, might erect
 His stature, and upright with front serene
 Govern the rest, self-knowing ; and from thence 510
 Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes
 Directed in devotion, to adore
 And worship God supreme, who made him chief 515

PARADISE LOST.

Of all his works: therefore the Omnipotent
 Eternal Father (for where is not he
 Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake:
 Let us make now Man in our image, Man
 In our similitude, and let them rule 520
 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,
 Beast of the field, and over all the Earth,
 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
 This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O Man,
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breathed 525
 The breath of life; in his own image he
 Created thee, in the image of God
 Express; and thou becamest a living soul.
 Male he created thee; but thy consort
 Female, for race; then bless'd mankind, and said, 530
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth;
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,
 And every living thing that moves on the Earth.
 Wherever thus created, for no place 535
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste;
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540
 Gave thee; all sorts are here that all the Earth yields
 Variety without end; but of the tree,
 Which, tasted, works knowledge of good and evil,
 Thou mayst not; in the day thou eat'st, thou diest:
 Death is the penalty imposed; beware, 545
 And govern well thy appetite; lest Sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
 So even and morn accomplish'd the sixth day; 550
 Yet not till the Creator from his work
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,
 Up to the Heaven of Heavens, his high abode;

Thence to behold this new created world,
 The addition of his empire, how it show'd 555
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
 Answering his great idea. Up he rode
 Follow'd with acclamation, and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned
 Angelic harmonies : the earth, the air 560
 Resounded (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st,)
 The heavens and all the constellations rung,
 The planets in their station listening stood,
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.
 Open, ye everlasting gates ! they sung, 565
 Open, ye Heavens ! your living doors ; let in
 The great Creator from his work return'd
 Magnificent, his six days' work, a World ;
 Open, and henceforth oft ; for God will deiga
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men, 570
 Delighted ; and with frequent intercourse
 Thither will send his winged messengers
 On errands of supernal grace. So sung
 The glorious train ascending : He through Heaven,
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 575
 To God's eternal house direct the way ;
 A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,
 Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,
 Which nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest 580
 Powder'd with stars. And now on Earth the seventh
 Evening arose in Eden, for the sun
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,
 Forerunning night ; when at the holy mount
 Of Heaven's high-seated top, the imperial throne 585
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,
 The Filial Power arrived, and sat him down
 With his great Father ; for he also went
 Invisible, yet staid (such privilege
 Hath Omnipresence,) and the work ordain'd, 5
 Author and End of all things ; and, from work

PARADISE LOST.

169

Now resting, blessed and hallow'd the seventh day,
 As resting on that day from all his work .
 But not in silence holy kept : the harp
 Had work and rested not ; the solemn pipe, 595
 And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,
 All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,
 Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice
 Choral or unison : of incense clouds,
 Fuming from golden censurs, hid the mount. 600
 Creation and the six days' acts they sung :
 Great are thy works, Jehovah ! infinite
 Thy power ! what thought can measure thee, or tongue
 Relate thee ! Greater now in thy return
 Than from the giant Angels : Thee that day 605
 Thy thunders magnified ; but to create
 Is greater than created to destroy.
 Who can impair thee, Mighty King, or bound
 Thy empire ! Easily the proud attempt
 Of Spirits apostate, and their counsels vain, 610
 Thou hast repelled ; while impiously they thought
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
 To manifest the more thy might : his evil 615
 Thou usest, and from thence createst more good.
 Witness this new-made world, another Heaven
 From Heaven gate not far, founded in view
 On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea ;
 Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620
 Numerous, and every star perhaps a world
 Of destined habitation ; but thou know'st
 Their seasons : among these the seat of Men,
 Earth, with her nether ocean circumfused,
 Their pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy Men, 625
 And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanced !
 Created in his image, there to dwell
 And worship him ; and in reward to rule
 Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,

And multiply a race of worshippers 630
Holy and just : thrice happy, if they know
Their happiness, and persevere upright !
So sung they, and the empyrean rung
With hallelujahs : thus was sabbath kept.
And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd 635
How first this world and face of things began,
And what before thy memory was done
From the beginning ; that posterity,
Inform'd by thee, might know : if else thou seek'st
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VIII.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions; is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge: Adam assents: and, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve; his discourse with the Angel thereupon: who, after admonitions repeated, departs

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear
So charming left his voice, that he awhile
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear;
Then, as new waked, thus gratefully replied:
What thanks sufficient, or what recompense 5
Equal, have I to render thee, divine
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed
This friendly condescension to relate
Things, else by me unsearchable; now heard 10
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
With glory attributed to the high
Creator! Something yet of doubt remains,
Which only thy solution can resolve.
When I behold this goodly frame, this world, 15
Of Heaven and earth consisting; and compute
Their magnitudes; this Earth, a spot, a grain,
An atom, with the firmament compared
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll
Spaces incomprehensible (for such 20
Their distance argues, and their swift return
Diurnal,) merely to officiate light
Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,

One day and night ; in all her vast survey
 Useless besides ; reasoning I oft admire 25
 How Nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,
 For aught appears, and on their orbs impose 30
 Such restless revolution day by day
 Repeated ; while the sedentary Earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Served by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives, 35
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light ;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.
 So spake our sire, and by his countenance seem'd
 Entering on studious thoughts abstruse ; which Eve
 Perceiving, where she sat retired in sight, 41
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,
 To visit how they prospered, bud and bloom, 45
 Her nursery ; they at her coming sprung,
 And, touch'd by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high : such pleasure she reserved, 50
 Adam relating, she sole auditress ;
 Her husband the relater she preferr'd
 Before the Angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather ; he, she knew, would intermix
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute 55
 With conjugal caresses : from his lip
 Not words alone pleased her. / O ! when meet now
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd ?
 With goddess-like demeanour forth she went,
 Not unattended ; for on her, as Queen, 60
 A pomp of winning Graces waited still,

PARADISE LOST.

173

And from about her shot darts of desire
 Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.
 And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt proposed,
 Benevolent and facile thus replied : 65
 To ask or search, I blame thee not ; for Heaven
 Is as the book of God before thee set,
 Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learn
 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years :
 This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth, 70
 Imports not, if thou reckon right ; the rest
 From Man or Angel the great Architect
 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
 Rather admire ; or, if they list to try 75
 Conjecture, he his fabric of the Heavens
 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move
 His laughter at their quaint opinions wide
 Hereafter ; when they come to model Heaven
 And calculate the stars, how they will wield 80
 The mighty frame ; how build, unbuild, contrive
 To save appearances ; how gird the sphere
 With centric and eccentric scribbled o'er,
 Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb :
 Already by thy reasoning this I guess, 85
 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
 The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
 The benefit : Consider first, that great 90
 Or bright infers not excellence : the Earth,
 Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,
 Nor glistening, may of solid good contain
 More plenty than the sun that barren shines ;
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect, 95
 But in the fruitful Earth ; there first received,
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
 Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries
 Officious ; but to thee, Earth's habitant.

And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak 100
 The Maker's high magnificence, who built
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far ;
 That Man may know he dwells not in his own ;
 An edifice too large for him to fill,
 Lodged in a small partition ; and the rest 105
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
 The swiftness of those circles attribute,
 Though numberless to his Omnipotence,
 That to corporeal substances could add
 Speed almost spiritual : Me thou think'st not slow,
 Who since the morning-hour set out from Heaven 111
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arrived
 In Eden ; distance inexpressible
 By numbers that have name. *But this I urge,*
 Admitting motion in the Heavens, to show 115
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it moved ;
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.
 God, to remove his ways from human sense,
 Placed Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight
 If it presume, might err in things too high, 121
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun
 Be centre to the world ; and other stars,
 By his attractive virtue and their own
 Incited, dance about him various rounds ? 125
 Their wandering course now high, now low, then hid,
 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
 In six thou seest ; and what if seventh to these
 The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,
 Insensibly three different motions move ? 130
 Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,
 Moved contrary with thwart obliquities ;
 Or save the sun his labour, and that swift
 Nocturnal and diurnal phœbus supposed,
 Invisible else above all stars, the wheel 135
 Of day and night ; which needs not thy belief,
 If earth, industrious of herself, fetch day

PARADISE LOST.

175

Travelling east, and with her part adverse
 From the sun's beam meet night, her other part
 Still luminous by his ray. — What if that light 140
 Sent from her through the wide transparent air,
 To the terrestrial moon be as a star,
 Enlightening her by day, as she by night
 This earth ? reciprocal, if land be there,
 Fields, and inhabitants : Her spots thou seest 145
 As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
 Fruits in her soften'd soil for some to eat
 Allotted there ; and other suns perhaps,
 With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,
 Communicating male and female light ; 150
 Which two great sexes animate the world,
 Stored in each orb perhaps with some that live.
 For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd
 By living soul, desert and desolate,
 Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute 155
 Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far
 Down to this habitable, which returns
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.
 But whether thus these things, or whether not ;
 Whether the sun, predominant in Heaven, 160
 Rise on the earth ; or earth rise on the sun ;
 He from the east his flaming road begin ;
 Or she from west her silent course advance,
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
 On her soft axle, while she paces even, 165
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along ;
 Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid ;
 Leave them to God above ; him serve, and fear !
 Of other creatures, as him pleases best,
 Wherever placed, let him dispose ; joy thou 170
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise
 And thy fair Eve ; Heaven is for thee too high
 To know what passes there ; be lowly wise :
 Think only what concerns thee, and thy being ;
 Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there 175

Live, in what state, condition, or degree ;
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd
 Not of Earth only, but of highest Heaven.

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, replied-
 How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure 189
 Intelligence of Heaven, Angel serene !
 And, freed from intricacies, taught to live
 The easiest way ; nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of life, from which
 God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares, 185
 And not molest us ; unless we ourselves
 Seek them with wandering thoughts and notions vain.
 But apt the mind or fancy is to rove
 Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end ;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190
 That, not to know at large of things remote
 From use, obscure and subtle ; but, to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime wisdom : What is more is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence : 195
 And renders us, in things that most concern,
 Unpractised, unprepared, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful ; whence, haply, mention may arise 200
 Of something not unseasonable to ask,
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour, deign'd
 Thee I have heard relating what was done
 Ere my remembrance : now, hear me relate
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard ; 205
 And day is not yet spent ; till then thou seest
 How subtly to detain thee I devise ;
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate ;
 Fond ! were it not in hope of thy reply :
 For, while I sit with thee, I seem in Heaven ; 210
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
 Than fruits of palm tree pleasantest to thirst
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour

Of sweet repast ; they satiate, and soon fill,
 Though pleasant ; but thy words, with grace divine
 Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety. 216

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heavenly meek :
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,
 Nor tongue ineloquent ; for God on thee
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 220

Inward and outward both, his image fair :
 Speaking, or mute, all comeliness and grace
 Attend thee ; and each word, each motion, form ;
 Nor less think we in Heaven of thee on Earth
 Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire 225

Gladly into the ways of God with Man :
 For God, we see, hath honour'd thee, and set
 On Man his equal love : Say therefore on ;

For I that day was absent, as befel,
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230

Far on excursion toward the gates of Hell ;
 Squared in full legion (such command we had),
 To see that none thence issued forth a spy,
 Or enemy, while God was in his work ;

Lest he, incensed at such eruption bold,
 Destruction with creation might have mix'd. 235

Not that they durst without his leave attempt ;
 But us he sends upon his high behests

For state, as Sov'reign King ; and to inure
 Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut 240

The dismal gates, and barricadoed strong ;
 But long ere our approaching heard within
 Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.

Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light
 Ere sabbath-evening : so we had in charge. 245

But thy relation now ; for I attend,
 Pleased with thy words no less than thou with mine.

So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire :
 For Man to tell how human life began 250

Is hard : for who himself beginning knew ?

Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induced me. As new waked from soundest sleep,
 Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,
 In balmy sweat ; which with his beams the sun. 255
 Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed. /
 Straight toward Heaven my wondering eyes I turn'd,
 And gazed awhile the ample sky ; till, raised
 By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,
 As thitherward endeavouring, and upright. 260
 Stood on my feet : about me round I saw
 Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,
 And liquid lapse of murmuring streams ; by these
 Creatures that lived and moved, and walk'd, or flew ;
 Birds on the branches warbling ; all things smiled ;
 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd. 265
 Myself I then perused, and limb by limb
 Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints, as lively vigour led :
 But who I was, or where, or from what cause, 270
 Knew not ; to speak I tried, and forthwith spake ;
 My tongue obey'd, and readily could name
 Whate'er I saw. Thou Sun, said I, fair light,
 And thou enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,
 Ye Hills, and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains,
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell, 275
 Tell, if ye saw, how I came thus, how here ? /
 Not of myself ;— —by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power preeminent :
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 280
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier than I know.—
 While thus I call'd, and strayed I knew not whither,
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld
 This happy light ; when, answer none return'd, 285
 On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,
 Pensive I sat me down : there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seized
 My drowsied sense, untroubled, though I thought

PARADISE LOST

179

I then was passing to my former state
 Inseparable, and forthwith to dissolve 290
 When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently moved
 My fancy to believe I yet had being,
 And lived One came, methought, of shape divine,
 And said, Thy mansion wants thee, Adam: rise, 296
 First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd
 First Father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide
 To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepared.
 So saying, by the hand he took me raised, 300
 And over fields and waters, as in air
 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up
 A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,
 A circuit wide, enclosed, with goodliest trees
 Planted, with walks and bowers; that what I saw 305
 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree,
 Loaden with fairest fruit that hung to the eye
 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eat; whereat I waked, and found
 Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310
 Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun
 My wandering, had not he, who was my guide
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,
 Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,
 In adoration at his feet I fall
 Submit: He rear'd me, and Whom thou sought'st at hand,
 Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest
 Above, or round about thee, or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat: 320
 Of every tree that in the garden grows
 Eat freely with glad heart; fear none no dearth
 But of the tree whose operation brings
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set
 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith, 325
 Amid the garden by the tree of life,
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,

And shun the bitter consequence : for know
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
 Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die, 330
 From that day mortal; and this happy state
 Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world
 Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounce
 The rigid interdiction, which responds
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice 335
 Not to incur ; but soon his clear aspect
 Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd
 Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth
 To thee and to thy race I give ; as lords
 Possess it, and all things that therein live, 340
 Or live in sea, or air ; beast, fish, and fowl.
 In sign whereof, each bird and beast behold
 After their kinds ; I bring them to receive
 From thee their names, and pay thee fealty
 With low subjection : understand the same 345
 Of fish within their watery residence,
 Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change
 Their element, to draw the thinner air.
 And thus he spake, each bird and beast behold
 Approaching two and two ; these cowering low 350
 With blandishment ; each bird stoop'd on his wing.
 I named them as they pass'd, and understood
 Their nature, with such knowledge God endued
 My sudden apprehension : But in these
 I found not what methought I wanted still ; 355
 And to the heavenly Vision thus presumed :
 O, by what name, for thou above all these,
 Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,
 Surpassest far my naming ; how may I
 Adore thee, Author of this universe, 360
 And all this good to man ? for whose well being
 So amply, and with hands so liberal,
 Thou hast provided all things : But with me
 I see not who partakes. In solitude
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone, 365

PARADISE LOST.

181

Or, all enjoying, what contentment find?
 Thus I presumptuous ; and the Vision bright,
 As with a smile more brighten'd, thus replied :
 What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the Earth
 With various living creatures, and the air 370
 Replenish'd, and all these at thy command
 To come and play before thee ? Know'st thou not
 Their language and their ways ? They also know,
 And reason not contemptibly ; With these
 Find pastime, and bear rule : thy realm is large. 375
 So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd
 So ordering : I, with leave of speech implored,
 And humble deprecation, thus replied :
 Let not my words offend thee, Heavenly Power,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,
 And these inferior far beneath me set ?
 Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony, or true delight ?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due 385
 Given and received ; but, in disparity
 The one intense, the other still remiss,
 Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove
 Tedious alike : of fellowship I speak,
 Such as I seek, fit to participate 390
 All rational delight : wherein the brute
 Cannot be human consort : They rejoice
 Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combined :
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl 395
 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.
 Whereto the Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd :
 A nice and subtle happiness, I see,
 Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice 400
 Of thy associates, Adam ! and wilt taste
 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary
 What think'st thou then of me, and this my state

Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd
 Of happiness, or not? who am alone 405
 From all eternity; for none I know
 Second to me or like, equal much less.
 How have I then with whom to hold converse,
 Save with the creatures which I made, and those
 To me inferior, infinite descents 410
 Beneath what other creatures are to thee?
 He ceased; I lowly answer'd: To attain
 The height and depth of thy eternal ways
 All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!
 Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee 415
 Is no deficiency found: Not so is Man,
 But in degree; the cause of his desire
 By conversation with his like to help
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou
 Shouldst propagate, already Infinite; 420
 And through all numbers absolute, though One:
 But Man by number is to manifest
 His single imperfection, and beget
 Like of his like, his image multiplied,
 In unity defective; which requires 425
 Collateral love, and dearest amity
 Thou in thy secrecy although alone,
 Best with thyself accompanied, seek'st not
 Social communication; yet, so pleas'd,
 Canst raise thy creature to what height thou wilt 430
 Of union or communion, deified:
 I, by conversing, cannot these erect
 From prone; nor in their ways complacence find
 Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom used
 Permissive, and acceptance found; which gain'd 435
 This answer from the gracious Voice Divine:
 Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd;
 And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself;
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440
 My image, not imparted to the brute;

Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike ;
 And be so minded still : I, ere thou spakest,
 Knew it not good for Man to be alone : 445
 And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee ; for trial only brought,
 To see how thou couldst judge of fit and meet :
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assured,
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.
 He ended, or I heard no more ; for now
 My earthly by his heavenly overpower'd,
 Which it had long stood under, strain'd to the height
 In this celestial colloquy sublime, 455
 As with an object that excels the sense
 Dazzled and spent, sunk down ; and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By Nature as in aid, and closed mine eyes.
 Mine eyes, he closed, but open left the cell 460
 Of fancy, my internal sight ; by which,
 Abstract as in a trance, methought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood :
 Who stooping open'd my left side, and took 465
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,
 And life-blood streaming fresh ; ~~While~~ was the wound,
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd :
 The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands ;
 Under his forming hands a creature grew, 470
 Manlike, but different sex ; so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all this world, seem'd now
 Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd
 And in her looks ; which from that time infused
 Sweetness into my heart, un~~fit~~ before, 475
 And into all things from her air inspired
 The spirit of love and amorous delight.
 She disappear'd, and left me dark ; I waked
 To find her, or for ever to deplore

Her loss, and other pleasures ail abjure: 480
 When out of hope, behold her, not far off,
 Such as I saw her in my dreams, adorn'd
 With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow
 To make her amiable: On she came,
 Led by her heavenly Maker, though unseen; 485
 And guided by his voice; nor uninform'd
 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites:
 Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
 In every gesture dignity and love.
 I, overjoy'd, could not forbear aloud: 490
 This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd
 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,
 Giver of all things fair! but fairest this
 Of all thy gifts! nor enviest, I now see
 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself 495
 Before me: Woman is her name; of Man
 Extracted; for this cause he shall forego
 Father and mother, and to his wife adhere;
 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.
 She heard me thus: and though divinely brought,
 Yet innocence, and virgin modesty, 501
 Her virtue, and the conscience of her worth,
 That would be woo'd, and not unsought to be won,
 Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retired,
 The more desirable; or, to say all, 505
 Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,
 Wrought in her so, that seeing me she turn'd:
 I follow'd her; she what was honour knew,
 And with obsequious majesty approved
 My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower 510
 I led her blushing like the morn: All Heaven
 And happy constellations on that hour
 Shed their selectest influence; the Earth
 Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill;
 Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs 515
 Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings
 Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,

PARADISE LOST.

185

Disporting, till the amorous bird of night
 Sung spousal, and bid ~~haste~~ the evening star
 On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp. 590 +

Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought
 My story to the sum of earthly bliss,
 Which I enjoy ; and must confess to find
 In all things else delight indeed, but such
 As, used or not, works in the mind no change, 525
 Nor vehement desire ; these delicacies
 I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,
 Walks, and the melody of birds : but here
 Far otherwise, transported I behold,
 Transported touch ; here passion first I felt, 530
 Commotion strange ! in all enjoyments else
 Superior and unmoved ; here only weak
 Against the charm of Beauty's powerful glance.
 Or Nature fail'd in me, and left some part
 Not proof enough such object to sustain ; 535
 Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps
 More than enough ; at least on her bestow'd
 Too much of ornament, in outward show
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.
 For well I understand in the prime end 540
 Of Nature her the inferior, in the mind
 And inward faculties, which most excel ;
 In outward also her resembling less
 His image who made both, and less expressing
 The character of that dominion given 545
 O'er other creatures : Yet when I approach
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in herself complete, so well to know
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best : . 550
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls
 Degraded ; Wisdom in discourse with her
 Loses discountenanced, and like folly shows
 Authority and Reason on her wait,

As one intended first, not after made 555
 Occasionally ; and, to consummate all,
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard angelic placed
 To whom the Angel with contracted brow : 560
 Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part ;
 Do thou but thin ; and be not diffident
 Of Wisdom ; she deserts thee not, if thou
 Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh ;
 By attributing overmuch to things 565
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.
 For, what admirest thou, what transports thee so ?
 An outside ? fair, no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love ;
 Not thy subjection ; Weigh with her thyself ; 570
 Then value : Ofttimes nothing profits more
 Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right
 Well managed ; of that skill the more thou know'st,
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,
 And to realities yield all her shows : 575
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
 So awful, that with honour thou mayst love
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.
 But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind
 Is propagated, seem such dear delight 580
 Beyond all other ; think the same vouchsafed
 To cattle and each beast ; which would not be
 To them made common and divulged, if aught
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 The soul of man, or passion in him move. 585
 What higher in her society thou find'st
 Attractive, human, rational, love still ;
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
 Wherein true love consists not : Love refines
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges ; hath his seat 590
 In reason and is judicious ; is the scale

PARADISE LOST.

187

By which to heavenly love thou mayst ascend,
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure ; for which cause,
 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.
 To whom thus, half abash'd, Adam replied : 595
 Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor aught
 In procreation common to all kinds
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far,
 And with mysterious reverence I deem,)
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts, 600
 Those thousand decencies, that daily flow
 From all her words and actions mix'd with love
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul ;
 Harmony to behold in wedded pair 605
 More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.
 Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense
 Variously representing ; yet still free, 610
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.
 To love thou blamest me not ; for Love, thou say'st,
 Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide :
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask :
 Love not the heavenly Spirits, and how their love 615
 Express they ? by looks only ? or do they mix
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch ?
 To whom the Angel, with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rosy red, Love's proper hue,
 Answer'd : Let it suffice thee that thou know'st 620
 Us happy, and without love no happiness
 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st
 (And pure thou wert created,) we enjoy
 In eminence ; and obstacle find none
 Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars ; 625
 Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,
 Total they mix, union of pure with pure
 Desiring, nor restrain'd conveyance need,
 As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.

But I can now no more ; the parting sun 630
 Beyond the Earth's green Cap: and verdant Isles
 Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.
 Be strong, live happy, and love ! But, first of all,
 Him, whom to love is to obey, and keep
 His great command : take heed lest passion sway 635
 Thy judgment to do aught, which else free will
 Would not admit : thine, and of all thy sons,
 The weal or woe in thee is placed : beware !
 I in thy persevering shall rejoice,
 And all the bless'd : Stand fast ; to stand or fall 640
 Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.
 Perfect within, no outward aid require ;
 And all temptation to transgress repel.
 So saying, he arose ; whom Adam thus
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part, 645
 Go, heavenly guest, ethereal Messenger.
 Sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore !
 Gentle to me and affable hath been
 Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever
 With grateful memory : Thou to mankind 650
 Be good and friendly still, and oft return !
 So parted they ; the Angel up to Heaven
 From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

Satan, having compassed the Earth, with meditated guile returns, as a mist, by night into Paradise; enters into the Serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not; alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone; Eve, loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields: The Serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking; with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding not till now; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: The Serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments, induces her at length to eat; she, pleased with the taste, deliberates awhile whether to impart thereof to Adam or not; at last brings him of the fruit; relates what persuaded her to eat thereof; Adam, at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her: and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit; The effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where God or Angel guest
With Man, as with his friend, familiar used,
To sit indulgent, and with him partake
Rural repast; permitting him the while
Venial discourse unblamed. I now must change 5
Those notes to tragic; foul distrust, and breach
Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
And disobedience: on the part of Heaven,
Now alienated, distance and distaste,
Anger and just rebuke, and judgment given, 10
That brought into this world a world of woe,
Sin and her shadow Death, and misery,
Death's harbinger: sad task! yet argument
Not less but more heroic than the wrath
Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued 15

Thrice fugitive about Troy wall ; or rage
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespoused ;
 Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long
 Perplex'd the Greek, and Cytherea's son ;
 If answerable style I can obtain 30
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns
 Her nightly visitation unimplored,
 And dictates to me slumbering ; or inspires
 Easy my unpremeditated verse :
 Since first this subject for heroic song 35
 Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late ;
 Not sedulous by nature to indite
 Wars, hitherto the only argument
 Heroic deem'd ; chief mastery to dissect
 With long and tedious havoc fabled knights 30
 In battles feign'd ; the better fortitude
 Of patience and heroic martyrdom
 Unsung ; or to describe races and games,
 Or tilting furniture, imblazon'd shields,
 Impresses quaint, caparisons and steeds, 35
 Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
 At joust and tournament ; then marshal'd feast
 Served up in hall with sewers and seneshals ;
 The skill of artifice or office mean,
 Not that which justly gives heroic name 40
 To person or to poem. Me, of these
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument
 Remains ; sufficient of itself to raise
 That name, unless an age too late, or cold
 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing 45
 Depress'd ; and much they may, if all be mine,
 Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear. †
 The sun was sunk, and after him the star
 Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring
 Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter 50
 'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round.
 When Satan, who late fled before the threats

PARADISE LOST.

191

Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improved
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent 55
 On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.
 By night he fled, and at midnight return'd
 From compassing the earth ; cautious of day,
 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried 60
 His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim
 That kept their watch ; thence full of anguish arisen,
 The space of seven continued nights he rode
 With darkness ; thrice the equinoctial line
 He circled ; four times cross'd the car of night. 65
 From pole to pole, traversing each colure ;
 On the eighth return'd ; and, on the coast averse
 From entrance or cherubic watch, by stealth
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,
 Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,
 Where Tigris, at the foot of Parædise, 71
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part
 Rose up a fountain by the tree of life. †
 In with the river sunk, and with it rose
 Satan, involved in rising mist ; then sought 75
 Where to lie hid ; sea he had search'd, and land,
 From Eden over Pontus and the pool
 Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;
 Downward as far antarctic ; and in length,
 West from Orontes to the ocean barr'd 80
 At Darien ; thence to the land where flows
 Ganges and Indus : Thus the orb he roam'd
 With narrow search ; and with inspection deep
 Consider'd every creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his wiles ; and found 85
 The Serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
 Him after long debate, irresolute
 Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence chose
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90
 From sharpest sight · for, in the wily snake

Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,
 As from his wit and native subtlety
 Proceeding ; which, in other beasts observed,
 Doubt might beget of diabolic power 93
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute.
 Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd
 O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferr'd
 More justly, seat worthier of Gods, as built 100
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old !
 For what God, after better, worse would build ?
 Terrestrial Heaven, danced round by other Heavens
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems, 105
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams
 Of sacred influence ! As God in Heaven
 Is centre, yet extends to all ; so thou,
 Centring, receivest from all those orbs : in thee
 Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears 110
 Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
 Of creatures animate with gradual life
 Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.
 With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,
 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange 115
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
 Rocks, dens, and caves ! But I in none of these
 Find place or refuge ; and the more I see
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120
 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
 Of contraries : all good to me becomes
 Bane, and in Heaven much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, nor in Heaven
 To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound :
 For only in destroying I find ease

PARADISE LOST.

To my relentless thoughts ; and, him destroy'd, 133
 Or won to what may work his utter loss,
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe ;
 In woe then ; that destruction wide may range :
 To me shall be the glory sole among 135
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd
 What he, Almighty styl'd, six nights and days
 Continued making ; and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving ? though perhaps
 Not longer since than I, in one night, freed 140
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half
 The angelic name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers : He, to be avenged,
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd 145
 More Angels to create, if they at least
 Are his created, or, to spite us more,
 Determined to advance into our room
 A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,
 Exalted from so base original, 150
 With heavenly spoils, our spoils, ~~What~~ he decreed,
 He effected ; Man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,
 Him lord pronounced ; and, O indignity !
 Subjected to his service angel-wings, 155
 And flaming ministers to watch and tend
 Their earthly charge : Of these the vigilance
 I dread ; and, to elude, thus wrapp'd in mist
 Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry
 In every bush and brake, where hap may find 160
 The serpent sleeping ; in whose mazy folds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 O foul descent ! that I, who erst contended
 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd
 Into a beast ; and, mix'd with bestial slime, 165
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
 That to the height of Deity aspir'd !

But what will not ambition and revenge
 Descend to? Who aspires must down as low
 As high he soar'd; obnoxious, first or last, 170
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils—
 Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd,
 Sinco higher I fall short, on him who next
 Provokes my envy, this new favourite 175
 Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,
 Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker raised
 From dust: Spite then with spite is best repaid.
 So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,
 Like a black mist low-creeping, he held on 180
 His midnight search, where soonest he might find
 The serpent; him fast sleeping soon he found
 In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
 His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles.
 Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den, 185
 Nor nocent yet; but, on the grassy herb,
 Fearless unfear'd he slept: in at his mouth
 The Devil enter'd; and his brutal sense,
 In heart or head, possessing, soon inspired
 With act intelligential; but his sleep 190
 Disturb'd not, waiting close the approach of morn—
 Now, when as sacred light began to dawn
 In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathed
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe,
 From the Earth's great altar send up silent praise 195
 To the Creator, and his nostrils fill
 With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
 And join'd their vocal worship to the choir
 Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake
 The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs: 200
 Then commune, how that day they best may ply
 Their growing work: for much their work outgrew
 The hands' despatch of two gardening so wide,
 And Eve first to her husband thus began:
 Adam, well may we labour still to dress 205

PARADISE LOST.

105

This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,
 Our pleasant task enjoin'd ; but, till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,
 Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind, 210
 One night or two with wanton growth derides,
 Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present :
 Let us divide our labours ; thou, where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind 215
 The woodbine round this arbour, or direct
 The clasping ivy where to climb ; while I,
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd
 With myrtle, find what to redress till noon :
 For, while so near each other thus all day 220
 Our task we choose, what wonder if, so near,
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on ; which intermits
 Our day's work, brought to little, though begun
 Early, and the hour of supper comes unearn'd? 225
 To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd :
 Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear !
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd,
 How we might best fulfil the work which here 230
 God hath assign'd us ; nor of me shalt pass
 Unpraised : for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed 235
 Labour, as to debar us when we need
 Refreshment, whether food or talk between,
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
 Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow.
 To brute denied, and are of love the food , 240
 Love, not the lowest end of human life.
 For not to irksome toil, but to delight,
 He made us, and delight to reason join'd.

These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands
 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide 245
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
 Assist us : but, if much converse perhaps
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield :
 For solitude sometimes is best society,
 And short retirement urges sweet return. † 250
 But other doubt possesses me, lest harm
 Befal thee sever'd from me ; for thou know'st
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 255
 By sly assault ; and somewhere nigh at hand
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder ;
 Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each
 To other speedy aid might lend at need : 260
 Whether his first design be to withdraw
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb
 Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more ;
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side 265
 That gave thee being, still shades thee, and protects
 The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
 Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.
 To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, 270
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
 With sweet austere composure thus replied. †
 Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth's Lord.
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn, 275
 And from the parting Angel overheard,
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,
 Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.
 But, that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
 To God or thee, because we have a foe 280
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.

His violence thou fear'st not, being such
 As we, not capable of death or pain,
 Can either not receive, or can repel.
 His fraud is then thy fear ; which plain infers 285
 Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced ;
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,
 Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear ?
 To whom with healing words Adam replied 290
 Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve !
 For such thou art ; from sin and blame entire :
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade
 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
 The attempt itself, intended by our foe. 295
 For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses
 The tempted with dishonour foul ; supposed
 Not incorruptible of faith, not proof
 Against temptation : thou thyself with scorn
 And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong, 300
 Though ineffectual found : misdeem not then,
 If such affront I labour to avert
 From thee alone, which on us both at once
 The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare ?
 Or daring, first on me the assault shall light—f— 305
 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;
 Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce
 Angels ; nor think superfluous others' aid.
 I, from the influence of thy looks, receive
 Access in every virtue ; in thy sight 310
 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
 Of outward strength ; while shame, thou looking on,
 Shame to be overcome or overreach'd,
 Would utmost vigour raise, and raised unite.
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel 315
 When I am present, and thy trial choose
 With me, best witness of thy virtue tried ?
 So spake domestic Adam in his care
 And matrimonial love ; but Eve who thought

Less attributed to her faith sincere, 320
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd :
 If this be our condition, thus to dwell
 In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,
 Subtle or violent, we not endued
 Single with like defence, wherever met ; 325
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm ?
 But harm precedes not sin : only our foe,
 Tempting, affronts us with his foul esteem
 Of our integrity : his foul esteem
 Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns 330
 Foul on himself ; then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd
 By us ? who rather double honour gain
 From his surmise proved false ; find peace within,
 Favour from Heaven, our witness, from the eyes 335
 And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd ?
 Let us not then suspect our happy state
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,
 As not secure to single or combined.
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so, 340
 And Eden were no Eden, thus exposed.
 To whom thus Adam fervently replied :
 O Woman, best are all things as the will
 Of God ordain'd them : His creating hand
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left 345
 Of all that he created, much less Man,
 Or aught that might his happy state secure,
 Secure from outward force ; within himself
 The danger lies, yet lies within his power :
 Against his will he can receive no harm. 350
 But God left free the will ; for what obeys
 Reason, is free ; and Reason he made right,
 But bid her well beware, and still erect ;
 Lest, by some fair-appearing good surpris'd,
 She dictate false ; and misinform the will 355
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
 Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins,

PARADISE LOST.

199

That I should mind thee oft ; and mind thou me,
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve ;
 Since Reason not impossibly may meet 360
 Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,
 And fall into deception unaware,
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoid
 Were better, and most likely if from me 365
 Thou sever not : trial will come unsought,
 Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve
 First thy obedience ; the other who can know,
 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?
 But, if thou think, trial unsought may find 370
 Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
 Go ; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more ;
 Go in thy native innocence, rely
 On what thou hast of virtue ; summon all !
 For God towards thee hath done his part : do thine.
 So spake the patriarch of mankind ; but Eve 375
 Persisted ; yet submiss, though last, replied :
 With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd
 Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
 Touch'd only ; that our trial, when least sought,
 May find us both perhaps far less prepared, 380
 The willinger I go, nor much expect
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.
 Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand
 Soft she withdrew ; and, like a Woodnymph light, 385
 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,
 Betook her to the groves ; but Delia's self
 In gait surpass'd, and goddesslike deport,
 Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd,
 But with such gardening tools as Art yet rude, 390
 Guiltless of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.
 To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,
 Likest she seem'd, Pomona when she fled
 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,

Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove. 395
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursued
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay. †
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return
 Repeated; she to him as oft engaged
 To be return'd by noon amid the bower, 400
 And all things in best order to invite
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
 O much deceived, much falling, hapless Eve,
 Of thy presumed return! event perverse!
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise 405
 Found'st either sweet repast or sound repose;
 Such ambush, hid among sweet flowers and shades,
 Waited with hellish rancour imminent
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss! 410
 For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,
 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come;
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
 The only two of mankind, but in them
 The whole included race, his purposed prey. 415
 In bower and field he sought, where any tuft
 Of grove or garden plot more pleasant lay,
 Their tendance, or plantation for delight;
 By fountain or by shady rivulet
 He sought them both, but wish'd his lap might find
 Eve separate; he wish'd, but not with hope 431
 Of what so seldom chanced; when to his wish,
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,
 Half spied, so thick the roses blushing round 435
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support
 Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,
 Hung drooping unsustain'd; them she upstays
 Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while 439
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.

PARADISE LOST.

201

Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm ;
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen, 435
 Among thick-woven arborets, and flowers
 Embroider'd on each bank, the hand of Eve :
 Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd
 Or of revived Adonis, or renown'd
 Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son ; 440
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.
 Much he the place admired, the person more.
 As one who long in populous city pent,
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air, 445
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn, to breathe
 Among the pleasant villages and farms
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight ;
 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine,
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ; 450
 If chance, with nymphlike step, fair virgin pass,
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more ;
 She most, and in her look sums all delight :
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold
 This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve, 455
 Thus early, thus alone : her heavenly form
 Angelic, but more soft and feminine,
 Her graceful innocence, her every air
 Of gesture, or least action, overawed
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereaved 460
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought ;
 That space the Evil One abstracted stood
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd
 Stupidly good ; of enmity disarm'd,
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge : 465
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid Heaven, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure, not for him ordain'd : then soon

Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts 470
Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what sweet
Compulsion thus transported, to forget

What hither brought us! hate, not love; nor hope
Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste 475

Of pleasure; but all pleasure to destroy,

Save what is in destroying; other joy

To me is lost. Then, let me not let pass

Occasion which now smiles; behold alone

The woman, opportune to all attempts, 480

Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,

Whose higher intellectual more I shun,

And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb

Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould;

Foe not formidable! exempt from wound, 485

I not; so much hath Hell debased, and pain

Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.

She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods!

Not terrible, though terror be in love

And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate, 490

Hate stronger, under show of love well feign'd;

The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclosed

In serpent, inmate bad! and toward Eve

Address'd his way: not with indented wave, 495

Prone on the ground, as since; but on his rear,

Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd

Fold above fold, a surging maze! his head

Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes;

With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect 500

Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass

Floated redundant: pleasing was his shape

And lovely; never since of serpent-kind

Lovelier, not those that in Illyria changed,

Hermione and Cadmus, or the god 505

In Epidaurus; nor to which transform'd

PARADISE LOST.

203

Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline, was seen ;
 He with Olympias ; this with her who bore
 Scipio, the height of Rome. With tract oblique
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd 510
 To interrupt, sidelong he works his way,
 As when a ship, by skilful steersmen wrought
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail :
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train 515
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,
 To lure her eye ; she, busied, heard the sound
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as used
 To such disport before her through the field,
 From every beast ; more duteous at her call 520
 Than at Circean call the herd disguised.
 He, bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,
 But as in gaze admiring : oft he bow'd
 His turret crest, and sleek enamel neck,
 Fawning ; and lick'd the ground whereon she trod. 525
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play : he, glad
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent-tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,
 His fraudulent temptation thus began : 530
 Wonder not, sov'reign Mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder ! much less arm
 Thy looks, the Heaven of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Insatiate ; I thus single ; nor have fear'd 535
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retired.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair.
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
 By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore
 With ravishment behold ! there best beheld, 540
 Where universally admired ; but here
 In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,

Who sees thee ? (and what is one ?) who should be seen
 A Goddess among Gods, adored and served 546
 By Angels numberless, thy daily train.

So gloz'd the Tempter, and his poem tun'd :
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,
 Though at the voice much marveling ; at length 550
 Not unamazed, she thus in answer spake :

What may this mean ? language of man pronounced
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd ?
 The first, at least, of these I thought denied
 To beasts ; whom God, on their creation-day, 555
 Created mute to all articulate sound :

The latter I demur ; for in their looks
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
 I knew, but not with human voice endued ; 560

Redouble then this miracle, and say,
 How camest thou speakable of mute, and how
 To me so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ?
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due. 565

To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve !
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all [obey'd :

What thou command'st ; and right thou shouldst be
 I was at first as other beasts that graze 570
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
 As was my food ; nor aught but food discern'd
 Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :

Till, on a day roving the field, I chanced
 A goodly tree far distant to behold 575
 Laden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,
 Ruddy and gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;

When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense
 Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats 580
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.

PARADISE LOST.

205

'To satisfy the sharp desire I had
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved
 Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once, 585
 Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent
 Of that alluring fruit, urged me so keen.
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon ;
 For, high from ground the branches would require
 Thy utmost reach or Adam's : round the tree 590
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
 Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
 I spared not ; for, such pleasure till that hour, 595
 At feed or fountain, never had I found.
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
 Strange alteration in me, to degree
 Of reason in my inward powers ; and speech
 Wanted not long ; though to this shape retain'd, 600
 Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
 Consider'd all things visible in Heaven,
 Or Earth, or Middle ; all things fair and good :
 But all that fair and good in thy divine 605
 Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray,
 United I beheld ; no fair to thine
 Equivalent or second ! which compell'd
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declared 610
 Sov'reign of creatures, universal Dame !
 So talk'd the spirited sly Snake ; and Eve,
 Yet more amazed, unwary thus replied :
 Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
 The virtue of that fruit, in thee first proved : 615
 But say, where grows the tree ? from hence how far ?
 For many are the trees of God that grow
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
 To us ; in such abundance lies our choice,
 As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd, 620

Still hanging incorruptible, till men
Grow up to their provision, and more hands
Help to disburden Nature of her birth.

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad :
Empress, the way is ready, and not long ; 625

Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket pass'd
Of blowing myrrh and balm : if thou accept
My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

Lead then, said Eve. He, leading, swiftly roll'd 630

In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
Brightens his crest ; as when a wandering fire,
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night
Condenses, and the cold environs round, 635

Kindled through agitation to a flame,
Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,
Misleads the amazed night-wanderer from his way
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool ; 640
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far.

So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud
Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree
Of prohibition, root of all our woe ; 644

Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake :

Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee ; †
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.

But of this tree we may not taste nor touch ; 650
God so commanded, and left that command
Sole daughter of his voice ; the rest, we live
Law to ourselves ; our reason is our law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully replied :
Indeed ! hath God then said that of the fruit 655
Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat,
Yet Lords declared of all in earth or air ?

To whom thus Eve, yet sinless : Of the fruit

PARADISE LOST.

207

Of each tree in the garden we may eat ;
 But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst 660
 The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die. [bold
 She scarce had said, though brief, when now more
 The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love
 To Man, and indignation at his wrong, 665
 New part puts on ; and, as to passion moved,
 Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely and in act
 Raised, as of some great matter to begin.
 As when of old some orator renown'd,
 In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence 670
 Flourish'd, since mute ! to some great cause address'd,
 Stood in himself collected ; while each part,
 Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue :
 Sometimes in height began, as no delay
 Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right : 675
 So standing, moving, or to height up grown,
 The Tempter, all impassion'd, thus began :
 O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,
 Mother of science ! now I feel thy power †
 Within me clear ; not only to discern 680
 Things in their causes, but to trace the ways
 Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.
 Queen of this universe ! do not believe
 Those rigid threats of death : ye shall not die :
 How should you ? by the fruit ? it gives you life 685
 To knowledge ; by the threatener ? look on me,
 Me, who have touch'd and tasted ; yet both live,
 And life more perfect have attained than Fate
 Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.
 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast 690
 Is open ? or will God incense his ire
 For such a petty trespass ? and not praise
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
 Of death denounced, whatever thing death be,
 Deter'd not from achieving what might lead 695
 To happier life, knowledge of good and evil

Of good how just ? of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd ?
 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just ;
 Not just ; not God ; not fear'd then, nor obey'd : 700
 Your fear itself of death removes the fear.
 Why then was this forbid ? Why, but to awe ?
 Why, but to keep ye low and ignorant
 His worshippers ? He knows that in the day
 Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear, 705
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as Gods,
 Knowing both good and evil, as they know. †
 That ye shall be as Gods, since I as Man,
 Internal Man, ~~is~~ but proportion meet ; 710
 I, of brute, human ; ye, of human, Gods.
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
 Human, to put on Gods ; death to be wish'd,
 Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring.
 And what are Gods, that Man may not become 715
 As they, participating Godlike food ?
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds .
 I question it ; for this fair earth I see,
 Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind ; 720
 Them, nothing : if they all things, who enclosed
 Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,
 That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains
 Wisdom without their leave ? and wherein lies
 The offence, that Man should thus attain to know ?
 What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree 725
 Impart against his will, if all be his ?
 Or is it envy ? and can envy dwell
 In heavenly breasts ?—These, these, and many more
 Causes import your need of this fair fruit. 730
 Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste !
 He ended ; and his words, replete with guile,
 Into her heart too easy entrance won ;
 Fix'd on the fruit she gazed, which to behold

PARADISE LOST

209

Might tempt alone ; and in her ears the sound 735
 Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd
 With reason to her seeming, and with truth :
 Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked
 An eager appetite, raised by the smell
 So savoury of that fruit, which with desire, 740
 Inclinal now grown to touch or taste,
 Solicited her longing eye ; yet first
 Pausing awhile, thus to herself she mused :
 Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admired ;
 Whose taste, too long forborne, at first essay 745
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise :
 Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use,
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree 750
 Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil ;
 Forbids us then to taste ! but his forbidding
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good
 By thee communicated, and our want ;
 For good unknown sure is not had : or, had 755
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise ?
 Such prohibitions bind not. But if death
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then 760
 Our inward freedom ? In the day we eat
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die !
 How dies the Serpent ? he hath eaten, lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
 Irrational till then. For us alone 765
 Was death invented ? or to us denied
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserved ?
 For beasts it seems : yet that one beast which first
 Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy
 The good befallen him, author unsuspect, 770
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
 What fear I then ? rather, what know to fear

Under this ignorance of good and evil,
 Of God or death, of law or penalty?
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine, 775
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
 Of virtue to make wise: What hinders then
 To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?
 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat! 780
 Earth felt the wound; and Nature from her seat,
 Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk
 The guilty Serpent; and well might; for Eve,
 Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else 785
 Regard'd; such delight till then, as seem'd,
 In ~~fruit she never~~ tasted, whether true
 Or fancied so, through expectation high
 Of knowledge; nor was Godhead from her thought.
 Greedily she engaged without restraint, 790
 And knew not eating death; Sateiate at length,
 And ~~begin~~ as with wine, jocund and boots,
 Thus to herself she pleasingly began:
 O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees
 In Paradise! of operation bless'd 795
 To sapience, hitherto obscured, infamed,
 And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end
 Created; but henceforth my early care,
 Not without song, each morning, and due praise,
 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease 800
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
 Till, dieted by thee, I grow mature
 In knowledge, as the Gods, who all things know:
 Though others envy what they cannot give:
 For, had the gift been theirs, it had not here 805
 Thus grown. Experience next, to thee I owe,
 Best guide; not following thee, I had remain'd
 In ignorance; thou open'st wisdom's way,
 And givest access, though secret she retire.
 And I perhaps am secret: Heaven is high, 810

PARADISE LOST.

High, and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps
 May have diverted from continual watch
 Our great Forbidder, ~~safe~~ with all his spies
 About him. But to Adam in what sort 815
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
 Without copartner? so to add what wants 830
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal; and perhaps,
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior, who is free?
 This may be well: But what if God have seen, 825
 And death ensue? Then I shall be no more
 And Adam, wedded to another Eve,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A death to think! Confirm'd then I resolve,
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe 830
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd;
 But first low reverence done, as to the Power
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infused 835
 Into the plant scintial sap, derived
 From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while,
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown; 340
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest-queen,
 Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd:
 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
 Misgave him; he the faltering measure felt;
 And forth to meet her went, the way she took
 That morn when first they parted: by the tree
 Of knowledge he must pass; there he her met

Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand
 A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smiled, 860
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
 To him she hasted; in her face excuse
 Came prologue and apology, too prompt;
 Which, with bland words at will, she thus address'd:
 Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay? 865
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, deprived
 Thy presence; agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange 860
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, or to evil unknown
 Opening the way, but of divine effect
 To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste; 865
 And hath been tasted such: The serpent wise,
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit; and is become,
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth
 Endued with human voice and human sense, 870
 Reasoning to admiration; and with me
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 The effects to correspond: opener mine eyes,
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart, 875
 And growing up to Godhead; which for thee
 Chiefly I sought; without thee can despise
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss; †
 Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot 880
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love;
 Lest, thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.
 Thus Eve, with countenance blithe her story told;
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd. 886

On the other side Adam, soon as he heard
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd ; 890
 From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve
 Down dropp'd, and all the faded roses shed ;
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke :

O fairest of Creation, last and best 895
 Of all God's works, Creature in whom excell'd
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet !
 How art thou lost ! how on a sudden lost,
 Defaced, deflower'd, and now to death devote ! 900
 Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate
 The sacred fruit forbidden ! Some cursed fraud
 Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown,
 And me with thee hath ruin'd ; for with thee 905
 Certain my resolution is to die :

How can I live without thee ! how forego
 Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly join'd,
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn !
 Should God create another Eve, and I 910
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee
 Would never from my heart : no, no ! I feel
 The link of Nature draw me : flesh of flesh,
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe. 915

So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
 Thus in calm mood, his words to Eve he turn'd :

Bold deed thou hast presumed, adventurous Eve, 920
 And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared,
 Had it been only coveting to eye
 That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence ;
 Much more to taste it under ban to touch.

But past who can recal, or done undo ? 925
 Not God omnipotent, nor Fate ; yet so
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact-
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
 Profaned first by the serpent, by him first
 Made common, and unhallow'd, ere our taste ; 930
 Nor yet on him found deadly ; yet he lives ;
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live, as Man,
 Higher degree of life ; inducement strong
 To us, as likely tasting to attain
 Proportional ascent ; which cannot be 935
 But to be Gods, or Angels demi-Gods.
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
 Through threatening, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,
 Set over all his works ; which in our fall, 940
 For us created, needs with us must fail,
 Dependent made ; so God shall uncreate,
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose ;
 Not well conceived of God, who, though his power
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loath 945
 Us to abolish, lest the Adversary
 Triumph, and say : " Fickle their state whom God
 Most favours : who can please him long ? Me first
 He ruin'd, now Mankind ; whom will he next ?"
 Matter of scorn, not to be given the Foe. 950
 However I with thee have fix'd my lot,
 Certain to undergo like doom : If death
 Consort with thee, death is to me as life ;
 So forcibly within my heart I feel
 The bond of Nature draw me to my own ; 955
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine ;
 Our state cannot be sever'd ; we are one,
 One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself.
 So Adam ; and thus Eve to him replied : †
 O glorious trial of exceeding love, 960
 Illustrious evidence, example high !
 Engaging me to emulate ; but, short

PARADISE LOST.

215

Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,
 Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung,
 And gladly of our union hear thee speak, 965
 One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof
 This day affords, declaring thee resolved,
 Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,
 Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear,
 To undergo with me one guilt, one crime, 970
 If any be, of tasting this fair fruit ;
 Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,
 Direct, or by occasion) hath presented
 This happy trial of thy love, which else
 So eminently never had been known ? 975
 Were it I thought death menaced would ensue
 This my attempt, I would sustain alone
 The worst, and not persuaded thee, rather die
 Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact
 Pernicious to thy peace ; chiefly assured 980
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,
 So faithful, love unequal'd : but I feel
 Far otherwise the event ; not death, but life
 Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys,
 Taste so divine that what of sweet before 985
 Hath touch'd my sense flat seems to this, and harsh.
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.
 So saying, she embraced him, and for joy
 Tenderly wept ; much won, that he his love 990 +
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
 In recompense (for such compliance bad
 Such recompense best merits) from the bough
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit 995
 With liberal hand : he scrupled not to eat,
 Against his better knowledge ; not deceived,
 But fondly overcome with female charm.
 Earth trembled from her entrails, as again
 In pangs ; and Nature gave a second groan ; 1000

Sky lour'd ; and, muttering thunder, some sad drops
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin
 Original : while Adam took no thought,
 Eating his fill ; nor Eve to iterate
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to sooth 1005
 Him with her loved society ; that now,
 As with new wine intoxicated both,
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
 Divinity within them breeding wings,
 Wherewith to scorn the earth : But that false fruit
 Far other operation first display'd, 1011
 Carnal desire inflaming ; he on Eve
 Began to cast lascivious eyes ; she him
 As wantonly repaid ; in lust they burn :
 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move : 1015
 Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste
 And elegant, of sapience no small part ;
 Since to each meaning savour we apply,
 And palate call judicious ; I the praise
 Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd. 1020
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
 From this delightful fruit, nor known till now
 True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be
 In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten. 1025
 But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,
 As meet is, after such delicious fare ;
 For never did thy beauty, since the day
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd
 With all perfections, so inflame my sense 1030
 With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now
 Than ever ; bounty of this virtuous tree !
 So said he, and forbore not glance or toy
 Of amorous intent ; well understood
 Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire. 1035
 Her hand he seized ; and to a shady bank
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbower'd,
 He led her nothing loath : flowers were the couch,

PARADISE LOST.

217

Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,
 And hyacinth ; Earth's freshest softest lap. 1040
 There they their fill of love and love's disport
 Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,
 The solace of their sin ; till dewy sleep
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit, 1045
 That with exhilarating vapour bland
 About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhaled ; and grosser sleep,
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams
 Incumber'd, now had left them : up they rose 1050
 As from unrest ; and, each the other viewing,
 Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds
 How darken'd ; innocence, that as a veil
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone :
 Just confidence, and native righteousness, 1055
 And honour, from about them, naked left
 To guilty Shame ; he cover'd, but his robe
 Uncover'd more So rose the Danite strong,
 Herculean Samson, from the harlot lap
 Of Philistean Dalilah, and waked 1060
 Shorn of his strength, They destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue : Silent, and in face
 Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute :
 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd :
 O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear 1066
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught
 To counterfeit Man's voice ; true in our fall,
 False in our promised rising ; since our eyes
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know 1070
 Both good and evil : good lost, and evil got ;
 Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know ;
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity,
 Our wonted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd, 1076
 And in our faces evident the signs

Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store ;
 Even shame, the last of evils ; of the first
 Be sure then.—How shall I behold the face
 Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy 1088
 And rapture so oft beheld ? Those heavenly shapes
 Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze
 Insufferably bright. O ! might I here
 In solitude live savage ; in some glade
 Obscured, where highest woods, impenetrable 1085
 To star or sunlight, spread their umbrage broad
 And brown as evening : Cover me, ye Pines !
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more !—
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise 1090
 What best may for the present serve to hide
 The parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen ;
 Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sew'd,
 And girded on our loins, may cover round 1095
 Those middle parts ; that this new comer, Shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.
 So counsel'd he, and both together went
 Into the thickest wood ; there soon they chose
 The fig tree ; not that kind for fruit renown'd, 1100
 But such as at this day, to Indians known,
 In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade 1105
 High overarch'd, and echoing walks between :
 There oft the Indian herdsmen, shunning heat,
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds
 At loopholes cut through thickest shade : Those leaves
 They gather'd, broad as Amazonian targe ; 1110
 And, with what skill they had, together sew'd,
 To gird their waist ; vain covering, if to hide
 Their guilt and dreaded shame ! O, how unlike
 To that first naked glory ! Such of late

Columbus found the American, so girt 1115
 With feather'd cincture ; naked else, and wild
 Among the trees on isles and woody shores.
 Thus fenced, and, as they thought, their shame in part
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind,
 They sat them down to weep ; nor only tears 1120
 Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord ; and shook sore
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once
 And full of peace, now toss'd and turbulent : 1125
 For Understanding ruled not, and the Will
 Heard not her lore ; both in subjection now
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath
 Usurping over sov'reign Reason claim'd
 Superior sway : From thus distemper'd breast, 1130
 Adam, estranged in look and alter'd style,
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd :
 Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and staid
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
 Desire of wandering, this unhappy morn, 1135
 I know not whence possess'd thee ; we had then
 Remain'd still happy ; not as now, despoil'd
 Of all our good ; shamed, naked, miserable !
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve
 The faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek 1140
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail. [Eve :
 To whom, soon moved with touch of blame, thus
 What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam, severe !
 Imputest thou that to my default, or will
 Of wandering as thou call'st it, which who knows 1145
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,
 Or to thyself perhaps ? Hadst thou been there,
 Or here the attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake ;
 No ground of enmity between us known, 1150
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.
 Was I to have never parted from thy side ?

As good have grown there still a lifeless fib.
 Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,
 Command me absolutely not to go, 1155
 Going into such danger, as thou saidst ?
 Too facile then, thou didst not much gainsay ;
 Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent,
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me. 1160
 To whom, then first incensed, Adam replied
 Is this the love, is this the recompense
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve ! express'd
 Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I ;
 Who might have lived, and joy'd immortal bliss, 1165
 Yet willingly chose rather death with thee ?
 And am I now upbraided, as the cause
 Of thy transgressing ? Not enough severe,
 It seems, in thy restraint ; What could I more ?
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold 1170
 The danger, and the lurking enemy
 That lay in wait ; beyond this had been force ;
 And force upon free will hath here no place.
 But confidence then bore thee on ; secure
 Either to meet no danger, or to find 1175
 Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps
 I also err'd, in overmuch admiring
 What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
 No evil durst attempt thee ; but I rue
 The error now, which is become my crime, 1180
 And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall
 Him, who, to worth in women overtrusting,
 Lets her will rule : restraint she will not brook ;
 And, left to herself, if evil thence ensue,
 She first his weak indulgence will accuse. 1185
 Thus they in mutual accusation spent
 The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning ;
 And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK X.

Man's transgression known, the guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved; God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in Hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of Man: To make the way easier from Hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over Chaos, according to the tract that Satan first made; then, preparing for Earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death: God foretels the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but, for the present, commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolement of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but, conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the Serpent; and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEANWHILE the heinous and spiteful act
Of Satan, done in Paradise; and how
He, in the Serpent, had perverted Eve,
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
Was known in Heaven; for what can scape the
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart
Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just

Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind
 Of Man, with strength entire and free will arm'd,
 Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd 10
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
 For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd,
 The high injunction, not to taste that fruit,
 Whoever tempted ; which they not obeying,
 Incurr'd (what could they less ?) the penalty ; 15
 And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.
 Up into Heaven from Paradise in haste
 The Angelic guards ascended, mute and sad,
 For Man ; for of his state by this they knew,
 Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen 20
 Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news
 From Earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeas'd
 All were who heard ; dim Sadness did not spare
 That time celestial visages, yet, mix'd
 With pity, violated not their bliss. 25
 About the new-arrived, in multitudes
 The ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befel : They towards the throne supreme,
 Accountable, made haste, to make appear,
 With righteous plea, their utmost vigilance, 30
 And easily approved : when the Most High
 Eternal Father, from his secret cloud,
 Amidst his thunder utter'd thus his voice :
 Assembled Angels, and ye Powers return'd
 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd, 35
 Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent ;
 Foretold so lately what would come to pass,
 When first this Tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell.
 I told ye then he should prevail, and speed 40
 On his bad errand ; Man should be seduced,
 And flatter'd out of all, believing lies
 Against his Maker ; no decree of mine
 Concurring to necessitate his fall,
 Or touch with lightest moment of impulse 45

His free will, to her own inclining left
 In even scale. But fallen he is ; and now
 What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass
 On his transgression, death denounced that day ?
 Which he presumes already vain and void, 50
 Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,
 By some immediate stroke ; but soon shall find
 Forbearance no acquittance, ere day end.
 Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.
 But whom send I to judge them ? whom but thee, 55
 Vicegerent Son ? To thee I have transferr'd
 All judgment, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.
 Easy it may be seen that I intend
 Mercy colleague with Justice, sending thee,
 Man's friend, his Mediator, his design'd 60
 Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,
 And destined Man himself to judge Man fallen.
 So spake the Father ; and, unfolding bright
 Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son
 Blazed forth unclouded Deity : He full 65
 Resplendent all his Father manifest
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild :
 Father Eternal, thine is to decree ;
 Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will
 Supreme ; that thou in me, thy Son beloved, 70
 Mayst ever rest well pleased. I go to judge
 On earth these thy transgressors ; but thou know'st,
 Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,
 When time shall be ; for so I undertook
 Before thee ; and, not repenting, this obtain 75
 Of right, that I may mitigate their doom
 On me derived ; yet I shall temper so
 Justice with mercy as may illustrate most
 Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.
 Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none 80
 Are to behold the judgment, but the judged,
 Those two ; the third best absent is condemn'd,

Convict by flight, and rebel to all law :
Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose 85
Of high collateral glory ; Him Thrones, and Powers,
Princedom, and Dominations ministrant,
Accompanied to Heaven-gate ; from whence
Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.

Down he descended straight ; the speed of Gods 90
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.

Now was the sun in western cadence low
From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,
To fan the earth now waked, and usher in
The evening cool ; when he, from wrath more cool, 95
Came the mild judge, and Intercessor both,
To sentence Man : The voice of God they heard
Now walking in the garden, by soft winds

Brought to their ears, while day declined ; they heard,
And from his presence hid themselves among 100
The thickest trees, both man and wife ; till God,
Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud :

Where art thou, Adam wont with joy to meet
My coming seen far off ? I miss thee here,
Not pleased, thus entertain'd with solitude, 105
Where obvious duty ere while appear'd unsought :
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change
Absents thee, or what chance detains ?—Come forth !

He came ; and with him Eve, more loath, though first
To offend ; discountenanced both, and discompos'd ;
Love was not in their looks, either to God, 111
Or to each other ; but apparent guilt,
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.

Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answer'd brief :
I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice 115

Afraid, being naked, hid myself. To whom
The gracious Judge without revile replied :
My voice thou hast heard, and hast not fear'd,

PARADISE LOST.

225

But still rejoiced ; how is it now become 120
 So dreadful to thee ! That thou art naked, who
 Hath told thee ? Hast thou eaten of the tree
 Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat ?

To whom thus Adam sore beset replied :

O Heaven ! in evil strait this day I stand 125

Before my Judge ; either to undergo
 Myself the total crime, or to accuse

My other self, the partner of my life ;

Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,

I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130

By my complaint : but strict necessity

Subdues me, and calamitous constraint ;

Lest on my head both sin and punishment

However insupportable, be all

Devolved ; though should I hold my peace, yet thou

Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.— 135

This Woman, whom thou madest to be my help,

And gavest me as thy perfect gift, so good,

So fit, so acceptable, so divine,

That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140

And what she did, whatever in itself,

Her doing seem'd to justify the deed ;

She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

To whom the Sov'reign Presence thus replied :

Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey 145

Before his voice ? or was she made thy guide,

Superior, or but equal, that to her

Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place

Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,

And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 150

Hers in all real dignity ? Adorn'd

She was indeed, and lovely, to attract

Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts

Were such, as under government well seem'd ;

Unseemly to bear rule ; which was thy part 155

And person, hadst thou known thyself aright.

So having said, he thus to Eve in few :
 Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done ?
 To whom said Eve, with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 166
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd repli'd :
 The Serpent me beguiled, and I did eat.
 Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
 To judgment he proceeded on the accused
 Serpent, though brute ; unable to transfer 165
 The guilt on him who made him instrument
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
 Of his creation ; justly then accursed,
 As vitiated in nature : More to know
 Concern'd not man (since he no further knew,) 170
 Nor alter'd his offence ; yet God at last
 To Satan first in sin his doom applied,
 Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best :
 And on the Serpent thus his curse he fall :
 Because thou hast done this thou art accursed 175
 Above all cattle, each beast of the field ;
 Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,
 And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.
 Between thee and the woman I will put
 Enmity, and between thine and her seed ; 180
 Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel. †
 So spake this oracle, then verified
 When Jesus, Son of Mary, second Eve,
 Saw Satan fall like lightning down from Heaven,
 Prince of the air, then, rising from his grave, 185
 Spoil'd Principalities and Powers, triumph'd,
 In open show ; and, with ascension bright,
 Captivity led captive through the air,
 The realm itself of Satan, long usurp'd ;
 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet ; 190
 Even he, who now foretold his fatal bruise ;
 And to the woman thus his sentence turn'd
 Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply

By thy conception ; children thou shalt bring
 In sorrow forth ; and to thy husband's will 195
 Thine shall submit ; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounced :
 Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy wife,
 And eaten of the tree, concerning which
 I charged thee, saying, 'Thou shalt not eat thereof : 200
 Cursed is the ground for thy sake ; thou in sorrow
 Shalt eat thereof, all the days of thy life ;
 'Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth
 Unbid ; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field ;
 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 205
 Till thou return unto the ground ; for thou
 Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth,
 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judged he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent ;
 And the instant stroke of death, denounced that day,
 Removed far off ; then, pitying how they stood 211
 Before him naked to the air, that now
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume ;
 As when he wash'd his servants' feet, so now 215
 As father of his family, he clad
 Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,
 Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid ;
 And thought not much to clothe his enemies
 Nor he their outward only with the skins 220
 Of beasts, but inward nakedness much more
 Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness
 Arraying, cover'd from his Father's sight.
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
 Into his blissful bosom reassumed 225
 In glory, as of old ; to him appeas'd
 All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with Man
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinn'd and judged on Earth,
 Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death, 230
 In counterview within the gates, that now

Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame
Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,
Sin opening ; who thus now to Death began :

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing 235

Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives
In other worlds, and happier seat provides
For us, his offspring dear ? It cannot be

But that success attends him ; if mishap,
Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven 240

By his avengers ; since no place like this
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.

Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
Wings growing, and dominion given me large
Beyond this deep ; whatever draws me on, 245

Or sympathy, or some connatufal force,
Powerful at greatest distance to unite,
With secret amity things of like kind.

By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade
Inseparable, must with me along : 250+

For Death from Sin no power can separate.

But, lest the difficulty of passing back
Stay his return perhaps over this gulf
Impassable, impervious ; let us try
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine 255

Not unagreeable, to found a path
Over this main from Hell to that new world,
Where Satan now prevails : a monument

Of merit high to all the infernal host,
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260

Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.

Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn
By this new-felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meagre shadow answer'd soon : 265

Go, whither Fate and inclination strong
Leads thee ; I shall not lag behind, nor err

The way, thou leading ; such a scent I draw
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
The savour of death from all things there that live

PARADISE LOST.

Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest	229
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.	270
So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell	.
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock	.
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,	.
Against the day of battle, to a field,	275
Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lured	
With scent of living carcasses design'd	
For death, the following day, in bloody fight :	
So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd	
His nostril wide into the murky air ;	280
Sagacious of his quarry from so far.	
Them both from out Hell gates, into the waste	
Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark,	
Flew diverse ; and with power (their power was great)	
Hovering upon the waters, what they met	285
Solid or slimy, as in raging sea	
Toss'd up and down, together crowded drove,	
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell :	
As when two polar winds, blowing adverse	
Upon the Cronian sea, together drive	290
Mountains of ice, that stop the imagined way	
Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich	
Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil	
Death with his mace petrific, cold and dry,	
As with a trident, smote ; and fix'd as firm	295
As Delos, floating once ; the rest his look	
Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move ;	
And with Asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,	
Deep to the roots of Hell the gather'd beach	
They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on	300
Over the foaming deep high-arch'd, a bridge	
Of length prodigious, joining to the wall	
Immovable of this now fenceless world,	
Forfeit to Death ; from hence a passage broad,	
Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to Hell.	305
So, if great things to small may be compared,	
Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,	

From Susa, his Memnonian palace high,
 Came to the sea ; and, over Hellespont
 Bridging his way, Europe with Asia join'd, 310
 And scourged with many a stroke the indignant waves.
 Now had they brought the work by wondrous art
 Pontifical, a ridge of pendent rock,
 Over the vex'd abyss, following the track
 Of Satan to the selfsame place where he 315
 First lighted from his wing, and landed safe
 From out of Chaos to the outside bare
 Of this round world : with pins of adamant
 And chains they made all fast, too fast they made
 And durable ! and now in little space 320
 The confines met of empyréan Heaven,
 And of this World ; and, on the left hand, Hell.
 With long reach interposed ; three several ways
 In sight, to each of these three places led
 And now their way to Earth they had descried, 325
 To Paradise first tending ; when, behold !
 Satan, in likeness of an Angel bright,
 Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering
 His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose :
 Disguised he came ; but those his children dear 330
 Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
 He after Eve seduced, unminded slunk
 Into the wood fast by ; and, changing shape,
 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
 By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded 335
 Upon her husband ; saw their shame that sought
 Vain covertures ; but when he saw descend
 The Son of God to judge them, terrified
 He fled ; not hoping to escape, but shun
 The present ; fearing, guilty, what his wrath 340
 Might suddenly inflict ; that pass'd, return'd
 By night, and listening where the hapless pair
 Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,
 Thence gather'd his own doom ; which understood
 Not instant, but of future time, with joy 345

PARADISE LOST.

231

And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd ;
 And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
 Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhoped
 Met, who to meet him came, his offspring dear.
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy increased.
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke :
 O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,
 Thy trophies ! which thou view'st as not thine own ;
 Thou art their author, and prime architect : 356
 For I no sooner in my heart divined,
 My heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,
 That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt, 360
 Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt.
 That I must after thee, with this thy son ;
 Such fatal consequence unites us three !
 Hell could no longer hold us in our bounds, 365
 Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure
 Detain from following thy illustrious track,
 Thou hast achieved our liberty, confined
 Within Hell-gates till now ; thou us impower'd
 To fortify thus far, and overlay, 370
 With this portentous bridge, the dark abyss,
 Thine now is all this world ; thy virtue hath won
 What thy hands buildd not ; thy wisdom gain'd
 With odds what war hath lost, and fully avenged
 Our foil in Heaven ; here thou shalt monarch reign,
 There didst not ; there let him still victor sway, 376
 As battle hath adjudged ; from this new world
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated ;
 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
 Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds, 380
 His quadrature, from thy orbicular world ;
 Or try thee now more dangerous to his throne

Whom thus the Prince of darkness answer'd glad:
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both;
 High proof ye now have given to be the race 385
 Of Satan (for I glory in the name,
 Antagonist of Heaven's Almighty King,)
 Amply have merited of me, of all
 The infernal empire, that so near Heaven's door
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390
 Mine, with this glorious work; and made one realm,
 Hell and this world, one realm, one continent
 Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I
 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint 395
 With these successes, and with them rejoice;
 You too this way, among these numerous orbs,
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;
 There dwell, and reign in bliss; thence on the earth
 Dominion exercise and in the air, 400
 Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declared;
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My substitutes I send ye, and create
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me; on your joint vigour now 405
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,
 Through Sin to Death exposed by my exploit.
 If your joint power prevail, the affairs of Hell
 No detriment need fear; go, and be strong!
 So saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed 410
 Their course through thickest constellations held,
 Spreading their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,
 And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse
 Then suffer'd. The other way Satan went down
 The causey to Hell gate: On either side 415
 Disparted Chaos overbuilt exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,
 That scorn'd his indignation: through the gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,
 And all about found desolate; for those, 420

PARADISE LOST.

233

Appointed to sit there, had left their charge,
 Flown to the upper world ; the rest were all
 Far to the inland retired, about the walls
 Of Pandemonium ; city and proud seat
 Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd 425
 Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd ;
 There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand
 In council sat, solicitous what chance
 Might intercept their emperor sent ; so he
 Departing gave command, and they observed. 430 +
 As when the Tartar from his Russian foe,
 By Astracan, over the snowy plains,
 Retires ; or Bactrian Sophi, from the horns
 Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond
 The realm of Aladule, in his retreat 435
 To Tauris or Casbeen : So these, the late
 Heaven-banish'd host, left desert utmost Hell
 Many a dark league, reduced in careful watch
 Round their metropolis ; and now expecting
 Each hour their great adventurer, from the search 440
 Of foreign worlds : He through the midst unmark'd
 In show plebeian Angel militant
 Of lowest order pass'd ; and from the door
 Of that Plutonian hall, invisible
 Ascended his high throne ; which, under state 445
 Of richest texture spread, at the upper end
 Was placed in regal lustre. Down awhile
 He sat, and round about him saw unseen ;
 At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head
 And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter ; clad 450
 With what permissive glory since his fall
 Was left him, or false glitter : All amazed
 At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng
 Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,
 Their mighty Chief return'd : loud was the acclaim :
 Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers, 456
 Raised from their dark Divan, and with like joy

Congratulant approach'd him ; who with hand
 Silence, and with these words attention, won.
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;
 For in possession such, not only of right, 461
 I call ye, and declare ye now ; return'd
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
 Triumphant out of this infernal pit
 Abominable, accursed, the house of woe, 465
 And dungeon of our tyrant : Now possess,
 As Lords, a spacious world, to our native Heaven
 Little inferior, by my adventure hard
 With peril great achieved. Long were to tell
 What I have done, what suffer'd ; with what pain 470
 Voyaged the' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
 Of horrible confusion ; over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is paved,
 To expedite your glorious march ; but I
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forced to ride 475
 The untractable abyss, plunged in the womb
 Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild ;
 That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely opposed
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproar
 Protesting Fate supreme ; thence how I found 480
 The new created world, which fame in Heaven
 Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful
 Of absolute perfection ! therein Man
 Placed in a Paradise, by our exile
 Made happy ; Him by fraud I have seduced 485
 From his Creator ; and, the more to increase
 Your wonder, with an apple ; he, thereat
 Offended, worth your laughter ! hath given up
 Both his beloved Man, and all his world,
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490
 Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
 To rule, as over all he should have ruled. +
 True is, me also he hath judged, or rather

PARADISE LOST.

	235
Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape	495
Man I deceived : that which to me belongs,	
Is enmity which he will put between	
Me and mankind ; I am to bruise his heel ;	
His seed (when is not set) shall bruise my head :	
A world who would not purchase with a bruise,	500
Or much more grievous pain ?—Ye have the account	
Of my performance : What remains, ye Gods,	
But up, and enter now into full bliss ?	
So having said, awhile he stood, expecting	
Their universal shout and high applause	505
To fill his ear ; when, contrary, he hears	
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,	
A dismal universal hiss, the sound	
On public scorn ; he wonder'd, but not long	
Had leisure, wondering at himself now more ;	510
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare ;	
His arms clung to his ribs ; his legs entwining	
Each other, till supplanted down he fell	
A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,	
Reluctant, but in vain ; a greater power	515
Now ruled him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd,	
According to his doom : he would have spoke,	
But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue	
To forked tongue ; for now were all transform'd	
Alike, to serpents all, as accessories	520
To his bold riot : Dreadful was the din	
Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now	
With complicated monsters head and tail,	
Scorpion, and Asp, and Amphisbæna dire,	
Cerastes horn'd, Hydrus, and Elops drear,	525
And Dipsas (not so thick swarm'd once the soil	
Bedropp'd with blood of Gorgon, or the isle	
Ophiusa ;) but still greatest he the midst,	
Now Dragon grown, larger than whom the sun	
Engender'd in the Pythian vale or slime,	530
Huge Python, and his power no less he seem'd	
Above the rest still to retain ; they all	

Him follow'd, issuing forth to the open field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout,
 Heaven-fallen, in station stood or just array 535
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chiefs
 They saw, but other sight instead! a crowd
 Of ugly serpents: horror on them fell,
 And horrid sympathy; for, what they saw, 540
 They felt themselves, now changing; down their arms,
 Down fell both spear and shield; down they as fast;
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 Catch'd by contagion; like in punishment,
 As in their crime. Thus was the applause they meant
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame 546
 Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood
 A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate
 Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550
 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
 Used by the Tempter: on that prospect strange
 Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining
 For one forbidden tree a multitude
 Now risen, to work them further woe or shame; 555
 Yet, parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain;
 But on they roll'd in heaps, and, up the trees
 Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks
 That curl'd Megæra; greedily they pluck'd 560
 The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew
 Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flamed;
 This, more delusive, not the touch, but taste
 Deceived; they, fondly thinking to allay
 Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit 565
 Chew'd bitter ashes, which the offended taste
 With spattering noise rejected; oft they essay'd,
 Hunger and thirst constraining; drugg'd as oft,
 With hatefulest disrelish writhed their jaws,
 With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell 570

PARADISE LOST.

237

Into the same illusion, not as Man [plagued
 Whom they triumph'd once lapsed. Thus were they
 And worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,
 Till their lost shape, permitted, they resumed ;
 Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo 575
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,
 To dash their pride and joy, for Man seduced.
 However, some tradition they dispersed
 Among the Heathen of their purchase got,
 And fabled how the Serpent, whom they call'd 580
 Ophion, with Eurynome, the wide
 Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule
 Of high Olympus ; thence by Saturn driven
 And Orps, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.
 Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair 585
 Too soon arrived ; Sin, there in power before,
 Once actual ; now in body, and to dwell
 Habitual habitant ; behind her Death,
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet
 On his pale horse ; to whom Sin thus began : 590
 Second of Satan sprung, all conquering Death !
 What thinkst thou of our empire now, though earn'd
 With travel difficult, not better far
 Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have set watch,
 Unnamed, undreaded, and thyself half starved ? 595
 Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer'd soon :
 To me, who with eternal famine pine,
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven ;
 There best, where most with ravine I may meet ;
 Which there, though plenteous, all too little seems 600
 To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corpse.
 To whom the incestuous mother thus replied :
 Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers
 Feed first ; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl ;
 No homely morsels ! and, whatever thing 605
 The scythe of Time mows down, devour unspared :
 Till I, in Man residing, through the race,
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect ;

And season him thy last and sweetest prey.
 This said, they both betook them several ways, 610
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature
 Sooner or later ; which the Almighty seeing,
 From his transcendent seat the Saints among,
 To those bright Orders utter'd thus his voice : 615

See, with what heat these dogs of Hell advance
 To waste and havoc yonder world, which I
 So fair and good created ; and had still
 Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man
 Let in these wasteful furies, who impute 620
 Folly to me ; so doth the Prince of Hell
 And his adherents, that with so much ease
 I suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heavenly ; and, conniving, seem
 To gratify my scornful enemies,
 That laugh, as if, transported with some fit
 Of passion, I to them had quitted all,
 At random yielded up to their misrule ;
 And know not that I call'd, and drew them thither,
 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630
 Which Man's polluting sin with taint hath shed
 On what was pure ; till, cramm'd and gorged, nigh
 With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling [burst,
 Of thy victorious arm, well pleasing Son,
 Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave, at last, 635
 Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.
 Then Heaven and Earth renew'd shall be made pure
 To sanctity, that shall receive no stain :
 Till then, the curse pronounced on both precedes. 640

He ended, and the heavenly audience loud
 Sung Hallelujah, as the sound of seas,
 Through multitude that sung : Just are thy ways,
 Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works ;
 Who can extenuate thee ? Next, to the Son 645
 Destined restorer of mankind, by whom

PARADISE LOST.

239

New Heaven and Earth shall to the ages rise,
 Or down from Heaven descend.—Such was their song ;
 While the Creator, calling forth by name
 His mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650
 As sorted best with present things. The sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat
 Scarce tolerable ; and from the north to call
 Decrepit winter ; from the south to bring 655
 Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon
 Her office they prescribed ; to the other five
 Their planetary motions, and aspects,
 In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite,
 Of noxious efficacy, and when to join 660
 In synod unbenign ; and taught the fix'd
 Their influence malignant when to shower,
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous : To the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound 665
 Sea, air, and shore ; the thunder when to roll
 With terror through the dark aerial hall.
 Some say, he bid his Angels turn askance
 The poles of earth, twice ten degrees and more,
 From the sun's axle ; they with labour push'd 670
 Oblique the centric globe : Some say, the sun
 Was bid turn reins from the' equinoctial road
 Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven
 Atlantic Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,
 Up to the Tropic Crab ; thence down amain 675
 Ey Leo, and the Virg'in, and the Scales,
 As deep as Capricorn ; to bring in change
 Of seasons to each clime ; else had the spring
 Perpetual smiled on earth with verdant flowers
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680
 Beyond the polar circles ; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun,
 To recompense his distance, in their sight
 Had rounded still the horizon, and not known

Or east or west ; which had forbid the snow 685

From cold Estotiland, and south as far

Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit

The sun, as from Thyéstean banquet, turn'd

His course intended ; else how had the world

Inhabited, though sinless, more than now 690

Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ?

These changes in the Heavens, though slow, produced

Like change on sea and land ; sideral blast,

Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,

Corrupt and pestilent ; Now from the north 695

Of Norumbega, and the Sameod shore,

Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,

And snow, and hail, and stormy gust and flaw,

Boreas, and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,

And Thrascias, rend the woods, and seas upturn ; 700 †

With adverse blast upturns them from the south †.

Notus, and Afer black with thunderous clouds

From Serraliona ; thwart of these, as fierce,

Forth rush the Lévant and the Ponent winds,

Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral noise, 705

Sirocco and Libecchio. Thus began

Outrage from lifeless things ; but Discord first,

Daughter of Sin, among the irrational

Death introduced, through fierce antipathy :

Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl, 710

And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving,

Devour'd each other ; nor stood much in awe

Of Man, but fled him ; or, with countenance grim,

Glared on him passing. These were from without

The growing miseries, which Adam saw 715

Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,

To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within ;

And, in a troubled sea of passion toss'd,

Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint :

O miserable of happy ! Is this the end 720

Of this new glorious world, and me so late

The glory of that glory, who now become

PARADISE LOST.

Accurs'd of blessed ? hide me from the face
 Of God, whom to behold was then my height
 Of happiness !—Yet well, if here would end 735
 The misery ; I deserved it, and would bear
 My own deservings ; but this will not serve :
 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
 Is propagated curse. O voice, once heard
 Delightfully, *Increase and multiply* : 730
 Now death to hear ! for what can I increase,
 Or multiply, but curses on my head ?
 Who of all ages to succeed, but, feeling
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse
 My head ? Ill fare our ancestor impure, 735
 For this we may thank Adam ! but his thanks
 Shall be the execration : so, besides
 Mine own that hide upon me, all from me
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me rebound ;
 On me, as on their natural centre, light 740
 Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay
 To mould me Man ? did I solicit thee
 From darkness to promote me, or here place 745
 In this delicious garden—~~As~~ my will
 Concurr'd not to my being, it were but right
 And equal to reduce me to my dust :
 Desirous to resign and render back 750
 All I received ; unable to perform
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,
 Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added
 The sense of endless woes ? Inexplicable
 Thy justice seems ; yet, to say truth, too late 755
 I thus contest ; thou shouldst have been refused
 Those terms, whatever, when they were proposed :
 Thou didst accept them : wilt thou enjoy the good,
 Then cavil the conditions ? and, though God
 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760

Prove disobedient ; and, reprov'd, retort,
 Wherefore didst thou beget me ? I sought it not :
 Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee :
 That proud excuse ? yet him not thy election,
 But natural necessity begot. 705
 God made thee of choice his own, and of his own
 To serve him ; thy reward was of his grace ;
 Thy punishment then justly is at his will.
 Be it so, for I submit ; his doom is fair,
 That dust I am, and shall to dust return : 770
 O welcome hour whenever ! Why delays
 His hand to execute what his decree
 Fix'd on this day ? Why do I overlive ?
 Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out
 To deathless pain ? How gladly would I meet 775
 Mortality my sentence, and be earth
 Insensible ! How glad would lay me down
 As in my mother's lap ! There I should rest,
 And sleep secure ; his dreadful voice no more
 Would thunder in my ears ; no fear of worse 780
 To me and to my offspring would torment me
 With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
 Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die ;
 Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of Man
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish 785
 With this corporeal clod ; then, in the grave
 Or in some other dismal place, who knows
 But I shall die a living death ? O thought
 Horrid, if true ! Yet why ? It was but breath
 Of life that sinn'd ; what dies but what had life 790
 And sin ? The body properly had neither.
 All of me then shall die : let this appease
 The doubt, since human reach no further knows.
 For though the Lord of all be infinite,
 Is his wrath also ? Be it, Man is not so, 795
 But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise
 Wrath without end on Man, whom death must end ?
 Can he make deathless death ? That were to make

PARADISE LOST.

243

Strange contradiction, which to God himself
 Impossible is held; as argument 800
 Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out
 For anger's sake, finite to infinite,
 In punish'd Man, to satisfy his rigour,
 Satisfied never? That were to extend
 His sentence beyond dust and Nature's law; 805
 By which all causes else, according still
 To the reception of their matter, act;
 Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say
 That death be not one stroke, as I supposed,
 Bereaving sense, but endless misery 810
 From this day onward; which I feel begun
 Both in me, and without me; and so last
 To perpetuity;—Ah me! that fear
 Comes thundering back with dreadful revolution
 On my defenceless head; both Death and I 815
 Are found eternal, and incorporate both;
 Nor I on my part single; in me all
 Posterity stands cursed; fair patrimony
 That I must leave ye, Sons! O, were I able
 To waste it all myself, and leave ye none! 820
 So disinherited, how would you bless
 Me, now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind,
 For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,
 If guiltless? But from me what can proceed,
 But all corrupt; both mind and will depraved 825
 Not to do only, but to will the same
 With me? How can they then acquitted stand
 In sight of God? Him, after all disputes,
 Forced I absolve: all my evasions vain,
 And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still
 But to my own conviction: first and last 831
 On me, me only, as the source and spring
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due
 So might the wrath! Fond wish! couldst thou support
 That burden, heavier than the earth to bear; 835
 Than all the world much heavier, though divided

With that bad Woman? Thus, what thou desirest,
 And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope
 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
 Beyond all past example and future ; 840
 To Satan only like both crime and doom.
 O Conscience ! into what abyss of fears
 And horrors hast thou driven me : out of which
 I find no way, from deep to deeper plunged !

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud, 845
 Through the still night ; not now, as ere Man fell,
 Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air
 Accompanied ; with damps, and dreadful gloom ;
 Which to his evil conscience represented
 All things with double terror : on the ground 850
 Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground ; and oft
 Cursed his creator ; Death as oft accused
 Of tardy execution, since denounced

The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,
 Said he, with one thrice-acceptable stroke 855
 To end me ? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,
 Justice Divine not hasten to be just ?

But Death comes not at call ; Justice Divine
 Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
 O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers ' 860
 With other echo late I taught your shades
 To answer, and resound far other song.—
 Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,
 Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,
 Soft words to his fierce passion she essay'd : 865

But her with stern regard he thus repell'd :
 Out of my sight, thou Serpent ! That name best
 Befits thee with him leagued, thyself as false
 And hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,
 Like his, and colour serpentine, may show 870
 Thy inward fraud ; to warn all creatures from thee
 Henceforth ; lest that too heavenly form, pretended,
 To hellish falsehood snare them ! But for thee
 I had persisted happy ; had not thy pride

PARADISE LOST.

245

And wandering vanity, when least was safe,
 Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
 Not to be trusted ; longing to be seen,
 Though by the Devil himself ; him overweening
 To overreach ; but, with the serpent meeting,
 Fool'd and beguiled : by him thou, I by thee, 880
 To trust thee from my side ; imagined wise,
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults ;
 And understood not all was but a show,
 Rather than solid virtue ; all but a rib
 Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears, 885
 More to the part sinister, from me drawn ;
 Well if thrown out, as supernumerary
 To my just number found. O ! why did God,
 Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven
 With Spirits masculine, create at last 890
 This novelty on earth, this fair defect
 Of nature, and not fill the world at once
 With Men, as Angels, without feminine ;
 Or find some other way to generate
 Mankind ? This mischief had not then befallen, 895
 And more that shall befall ; innumerable
 Disturbances on earth through female snares,
 And strait conjunction with this sex : for either
 He never shall find out fit mate, but such
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake ; 900
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd
 By a far worse ; or, if she love, withheld
 By parents ; or his happiest choice too late
 Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock bound 905
 To a fell adversary, his hate or shame :
 Which infinite calamity shall cause
 To human life, and household peace confound.
 He added not, and from her turn'd : but Eve,
 Not so repulsed, with tears that ceased not flowing,
 And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet 911

Fell humble ; and, embracing them, besought
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint :

Forsake me not thus, Adam ! witness, Heaven,
What love sincere and reverence in my heart 915 +
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
Unhappily deceived ! Thy suppliant
I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not,
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress, 920
My only strength and stay : forlorn of thee,
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
Between us two let there be peace ; both joining,
As join'd in injuries, one enmity 925
Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,
That cruel Serpent : on me exercise not
Thy hatred for this misery befallen ;
On me already lost, me than thyself
More miserable ! Both have sinn'd ; but thou 930
Against God only ; I against God and thee ;
And to the place of judgment will return,
There with my cries impórtune Heaven, that all
The sentence, from thy head removed, may light
On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe ; 935
Me, me only, just object of his ire !

She ended weeping ; and her lowly plight,
Immovable, till peace obtain'd from fault
Acknowledged and deplored, in Adam wrought
Commiseration : soon his heart relented 940
Towards her, his life so late, and sole delight,
Now at his feet submissive in distress,
Creature so fair his reconcilment seeking,
His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, she said :
As soon disarm'd, his anger all he lost, 945
And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon :
Unwary, and too desirous, as before,
So now of what thou know'st not, who desirest

PARADISE LOST.

247

The punishment all on thyself; alas!
 Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain 950
 His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
 And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers
 Could alter high decrees, I to that place
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,
 That on my head all might be visited; 955
 Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,
 To me committed, and by me exposed.
 But rise;—let us no more contend, nor blame
 Each other, blamed enough elsewhere; but strive
 In offices of love, how we may lighten 960
 Each other's burden, in our share of woe;
 Since this day's death denounced; if aught I see,
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow-paced evil;
 A long day's dying, to augment our pain;
 And to our seed (O hapless seed!) derived. 965

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied:
 Adam, by sad experiment I know
 How little weight my words with thee can find,
 Found so erroneous; thence by just event
 Found so unfortunate: nevertheless, 970
 Restored by thee, vile as I am, to place
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
 Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
 What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen, 975
 Tending to some relief of our extremes,
 Or end; though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,
 As in our evils, and of easier choice.
 If care of our descent perplex us most,
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd
 By Death at last; and miserable it is
 To be to others cause of misery,
 Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring
 Into this cursed world a woful race,
 That after wretched life must be at last
 Food for so foul a monster; in thy power

It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
 The race unblest'd, to being yet unbegot.
 Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death
 Shall be deceived his glut, and with us two 990
 Be forced to satisfy his ravenous maw.—
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain
 From love's due rights, nuptial embraces sweet ;
 And with desire to languish without hope, 995
 Before the present object languishing
 With like desire ; which would be misery
 And torment less than none of what we dread ;
 Then, both ourselves and seed at once to free
 From what we fear for both, let us make short, 1000
 Let us seek Death ;—or, he not found, supply
 With our own hands his office on ourselves :
 Why stand we longer shivering under fears,
 That show no end but death, and have the power,
 Of many ways to die the shortest choosing, 1005
 Destruction with destruction to destroy ?—
 She ended here, or vehement despair
 Broke off the rest ; so much of death her thoughts
 Had entertain'd, as dyed her cheeks with pale.
 But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010
 To better hopes his more attentive mind
 Labouring had raised ; and thus to Eve replied—
 Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems
 To argue in thee something more sublime
 And excellent, than what thy mind contemns ; 1015
 But self-destruction therefore sought refutes
 That excellent thought in thee ; and implies,
 Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret
 For loss of life and pleasure overloved.
 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020
 Of misery, so thinking to evade
 The penalty pronounced ; doubt not but God
 Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so
 To be forestall'd : much more I fear lest death,

PARADISE LOST.

249

So snatch'd, will not exempt us from the pain 1025
 We are by doom to pay; rather, such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest
 To make death in us live: then let us seek
 Some safer resolution, which methinks
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030
 Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise
 The Serpent's head; piteous amends! unless
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe,
 Satan; who, in the serpent, hath contrived
 Against us this deceit: to crush his head 1035
 Would be revenge indeed! which will be lost
 By death brought on ourselves, or childless days
 Resolved, as thou proposest; so our foe
 Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040
 No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against ourselves; and wilful barrenness,
 That cuts us off from hope; and savours only
 Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke 1045
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard, and judged,
 Without wrath or reviling; we expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought
 Was meant by death that day: when lo! to thee 1050
 Pains only in childbearing were foretold,
 And bringing forth; soon recompensed with joy,
 Fruit of thy womb: on me the curse aslope
 Glanced on the ground; with labour I must earn
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse. 1055
 My labour will sustain me; and, lest cold
 Or heat should injure us, his timely care
 Hath, unbesought, provided; and his hands
 Clothed us unworthy, pitying while he judged;
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear 1060
 Be open, and his heart to pity incline,
 And teach us further by what means to shun

The inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow !
 Which now the sky, with various face, begins
 To show us in this mountain ; while the winds 1065
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks
 Of these fair spreading trees ; which bids us seek
 Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish
 Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star
 Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams 1070
 Reflected may with matter sere foment ;
 Or, by collision of two bodies, grind
 The air attrite to fire ; as late the clouds
 Justling, or push'd with winds, rude in their shock,
 Flashed the slant lightning ; whose thwart flame, driven
 down,
 kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine ; 1076
 And sends a comfortable heat from far,
 Which might supply the sun : such fire to use,
 And what may else be remedy or cure
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1080
 He will instruct us praying ; and of grace
 Beseeching him ; so as we need not fear
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd
 By him with many comforts, till we end
 In dust, our final rest and native home. 1085
 What better can we do than, to the place
 Repairing where he judged us, prostrate fall
 Before him reverent ; and there confess
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg ; with tears
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek ?
 Undoubtedly he will relent, and turn
 From his displeasure ; in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe, 1095
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy, shone ?
 So spake our father penitent ; nor Eve
 Felt less remorse : they, forthwith to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell

PARADISE LOST.

261

Before him reverent ; and both confessed 1100
Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd : with tears
Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
Of sorrow unfeign'd and humiliation meek

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XI.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise, sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them: but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shows to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach; goes out to meet him; the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: The Angel leads him up to a high hill; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

Thus they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood
Praying, for from the mercy-seat above
Prevenient grace descending had removed
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
Regenerate grow instead; that sighs now breathed 5
Unutterable; which the Spirit of prayer
Inspired, and wing'd for Heaven with speedier flight
Than loudest oratory: yet their port
Not of mean suitors; nor important less
Seem'd their petition, than when the ancient pair 10
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,
Daucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore
The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine
Of Themis stood devout. To Heaven their prayers
Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds 15
Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd
Dimensionless through heavenly doors; then clad
With incense, where the golden altar fumed
By their great Intercessor, came in sight
Before the Father's throne: them the glad Son 20
Presenting, thus to intercede began:

See, Father, what first-fruits on earth are sprung
 From thy implanted grace in Man ; these sighs
 And prayers, which in this golden censer, mix'd
 With incense, I thy priest before thee bring : 25
 Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed
 Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
 Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees
 Of Paradise could have produced, ere fallen
 From innocence. Now, therefore, bend thine ear 30
 To supplication ; hear his sighs, though mute ;
 Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
 Interpret for him ; me, his advocate
 And propitiation ; all his works on me,
 Good or not good, ingraft ; my merit those 35
 Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
 Accept me ; and, in me, from these receive
 The smell of peace toward mankind : let him live
 Before thee reconciled, at least his days
 Number'd, though sad ; till death, his doom (which I
 To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse,) 41
 To better life shall yield him : where with me
 All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss ;
 Made one with me, as I with thee am one.
 To whom the Father, without cloud, serene, 45
 All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
 Obtain ; all thy request was my decree :
 But, longer in that Paradise to dwell,
 The law I gave to nature him forbids :
 These pure immortal elements, that know 50
 No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,
 Eject him, tainted now ; and purge him off,
 As a distemper, gross, to air as gross,
 And mortal food ; as may dispose him best
 For dissolution wrought by sin, that first 55
 Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
 Corrupted. I, at first, with too fair gifts
 Created him endow'd ; with happiness

And immortality : that fondly lost,
 This other served but to eternize woe ; 60
 Till I provided death : so death becomes
 His final remedy ; and, after life,
 Tried in sharp tribulation, and refined
 By faith and faithful works, to second life,
 Waked in the renovation of the just, 65
 Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renew'd.
 But let us call to synod all the Bless'd [hide
 Through Heaven's wide bounds : from them I will not
 My judgments ; how with mankind I proceed,
 As how with peccant Angels late they saw, 70
 And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd.
 He ended, and the Son gave signal high
 To the bright minister that watch'd ; he blew
 His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps 75
 When God descended, and perhaps once more
 To sound at general doom. The angelic blast
 Fill'd all the regions : from their blissful bowers
 Of amarantine shade, fountain or spring,
 By the waters of life, where'er they sat
 In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 80
 Hasted, resorting to the summons high ;
 And took their seats : till from his throne supreme
 The Almighty thus pronounced his sov'reign will :
 O Sons, like one of us Man is become
 To know both good and evil, since his taste 85 †
 Of that defended fruit ; but let him boast
 His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;
 Happier, had it sufficed him to have known
 Good by itself, and evil not at all.
 He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite, 90
 My motions in him ; longer than they move,
 His heart I know, how variable and vain,
 Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand
 Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,
 And live for ever, dream at least to live 95

For ever, to remove him I decree,
 And send him from the garden forth to till
 The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.
 Michaël, this my behest have thou in charge ;
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim 100
 Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,
 Or in behalf of Man, or to invade
 Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :
 Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God
 Without remorse drive out the sinful pair ; 105
 From hallow'd ground the unholy ; and denounce
 To them, and to their progeny, from thence
 Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint
 At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd
 (For I behold them soften'd, and with tears 110
 Bewailing their excess,) all terror hide.
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,
 Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal
 To Adam what shall come in future days,
 As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix 115
 My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd ;
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :
 And on the east side of the garden place,
 Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,
 Cherubic watch ; and of a sword the flame 120
 Wide-waving ; all approach far off to fright,
 And guard all passage to the tree of Life,
 Lest Paradise a receptacle prove
 To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey : †
 With whose stolen fruit Man once more to delude. 125
 He ceased ; and the archangelic Power prepared
 For swift descent ; with him the cohort bright
 Of watchful Cherubim : four faces each
 Had, like a double Janus ; all their shape
 Spangled with eyes more numerous than those 130
 Of Argus, and more wakeful than the drowse,
 Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed
 Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile,

To resalute the world with sacred light,
 Leucothea waked ; and with fresh dews embalm'd 135
 The earth ; when Adam and first matron Eve
 Had ended now their orisons, and found
 Strength added from above ; new hope to spring
 Out of despair ; joy, but with fear yet link'd ;
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd : 140

Eve, easily may faith admit, that all
 The good which we enjoy from Heaven descends ;
 But, that from us aught should ascend to Heaven
 So prevalent as to concern the mind
 Of God high-bless'd, or to incline his will, 145
 Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer
 Or one short sight of human breath, upborne
 Even to the seat of God. For since I sought
 By prayer the offended Deity to appease ;
 Kneel'd, and before him humbled all my heart ; 150
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,
 Bending his ear ; persuasion in me grew
 That I was heard with favour ; peace return'd
 Home to my breast, and to my memory
 His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ; 155
 Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now
 Assures me that the bitterness of death
 Is pass'd, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,
 Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 160
 Man is to live ; and all things live for Man.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek :
 Ill worthy I such title should belong
 To me transgressor ; who, for thee ordain'd
 A help, became thy snare ; to me reproach 165
 Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise ;
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
 That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd
 The source of life ; next favourable thou,
 Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsafest, 170
 Far other name deserving. But the field

To labour calls us, now with sweat imposed,
 Though after sleepless night ; for see ! the morn,
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
 Her rosy progress smiling : let us forth ; 175
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
 Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd
 Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,
 What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?
 Here let us live, though in fallen state, content. 180

So spake, so wish'd much humbled Eve ; but Fate
 Subscribed not : Nature first gave signs, impress'd
 On bird, beast, air ; air suddenly eclipsed,
 After short blush of morn ; nigh in her sight
 The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his æry tour, 185
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove ;
 Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,
 First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;
 Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight. 190
 Adam observed, and with his eye the chase
 Pursuing, not unmoved, to Eve thus spake.

O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
 Which Heaven, by these mute signs in Nature, shows
 Forerunners of his purpose ; or to warn 195
 Us, haply too secure of our discharge
 From penalty, because from death released
 Some days : how long, and what till then our life,
 Who knows ? or more than this, that we are dust,
 And thither must return, and be no more ? 200
 Why else this double object in our sight
 Of flight pursued in the air, and o'er the ground,
 One way the selfsame hour ? why in the east
 Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning-light
 More orient in yon western cloud, that draws 205
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,
 And slow descends with something heavenly fraught ?

He err'd not ; for by this the heavenly bands
 Down from a sky of jasper lighted now

In Paradise, and on a hill made halt ; 210
 A glorious apparition, had not doubt
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.
 Not that more glorious, when the Angels met
 Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw
 The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright : 215
 Nor that, which on the flaming mount appear'd
 In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,
 Against the Syrian king, who to surprise
 One man, assassin-like, had levied war,
 War unproclaim'd. The princely Hierarch 220
 In their bright stand there left his Powers, to seize
 Possession of the garden ; he alone,
 To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,
 Not unperceived of Adam : who to Eve,
 While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake : 225†
 Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
 Of us will soon determine, or impose
 New laws to be observed ; for I descry,
 From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,
 One of the heavenly host ! and, by his gait, 230
 None of the meanest ; some great Potentate
 Or of the Thrones above ; such majesty
 Invests him coming ! yet not terrible,
 That I should fear ; nor sociably mild,
 As Raphaël, that I should much confide ; 235
 But solemn and sublime ; whom not to offend,
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.
 He ended : and the Archangel soon drew nigh,
 Not in his shape celestial, but as man
 Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms 240
 A military vest of purple flow'd,
 Livelier than Melibœan, or the grain
 Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old
 In time of truce ; Iris had dipp'd the woof ;
 His starry helm unbuckled show'd him prime 245
 In manhood where youth ended ; by his side,
 As in a glistening zodiac, hung the sword,

Satan's dire dread ; and in his hand the spear.
 Adam bow'd low ; he, kingly, from his state
 Inclined not, but his coming thus declared : 250

Adam ! Heaven's high behest no preface needs :
 Sufficient that thy prayers are heard ; and Death,
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
 Defeated of his seizure many days
 Given thee of grace ; wherein thou mayst repent, 255
 And one bad act with many deeds well done
 Mayst cover : well may then thy Lord, appeased,
 Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim ;
 But longer in this Paradise to dwell
 Permits not : to remove thee I am come, 260
 And send thee from the garden forth to till
 The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil. |

He added not ; for Adam at the news
 Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,
 That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen 265
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death !
 Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave
 Thee, native soil ! these happy walks and shades, 270
 Fit haunt of Gods ? where I had hope to spend,
 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day
 That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,
 That never will in other climate grow,
 My early visitation, and my last 275

At even, which I bred up with tender hand
 From the first opening bud, and gave ye names !
 Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank
 Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount ?
 Thee lastly, nuptial bower ! by me adorn'd 280
 With what to sight or smell was sweet ! from thee
 How shall I part, and whither wander down
 Into a lower world ; to this obscure
 And wild ? how shall we breathe in other air
 Less pure, accustom'd to immortal fruits ? 285

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild :
 Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign
 What justly thou hast lost, nor set thy heart,
 Thus overfond, on that which is not thine :
 Thy going is not lonely ; with thee goes 290
 Thy husband ; him to follow thou art bound ;
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil.
 Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd : 295 +
 Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or named
 Of them the highest ; for such of shape may seem
 Prince above princes : gently hast thou told
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
 And in performing end us ; what besides 300
 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and only consolation left
 Familiar to our eyes ! all places else 305
 Inhospitable appear, and desolate ;
 Nor knowing us, nor known : and, if by prayer
 Incessant I could hope to change the will
 Of Him who all things can, I would not cease
 To weary him with my assiduous cries : 310
 But prayer against his absolute decree
 No more avails than breath against the wind,
 Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth :
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
 This most afflicts me, that, departing hence, 315
 As from his face I shall be hid, deprived
 His blessed countenance : here I could frequent
 With worship place by place where he vouchsafed
 Presence Divine ; and to my sons relate,
 On this mount he appear'd ; under this tree 320
 Stood visible ; among these pines his voice
 I heard ; here with him at this fountain talk'd :
 So many grateful altars I would rear

PARADISE LOST.

261

Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory, 325
 Or monument to ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet-smelling gums; and fruits, and flowers :

In yonder nether world where shall I seek
 His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?
 For though I fled him angry, yet, recall'd 330
 To life prolong'd and promised race, I now
 Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
 Of glory ; and far off his steps adore. †

To whom thus Michaël with regard benign :
 Adam, thou know'st Heaven his, and all the Earth ;
 Not this rock only ; his Omnipresence fills 336

Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,
 Fomented by his virtual power and warm'd :
 All the earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
 No despicable gift ; surmise not then 340

His presence to these narrow bounds confined
 Of Paradise, or Eden, this had been
 Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread
 All generations ; and had hither come
 From all the ends of the earth, to celebrate 345

And reverence thee, their great progenitor.
 But this preeminence thou hast lost, brought down
 To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :
 Yet doubt not but in valley and on plain
 God is, as here, and will be found alike 350

Present ; and of his presence many a sign
 Still following thee, still compassing thee round
 With goodness and paternal love, his face
 Express, and of his steps the track divine.
 Which that thou mayst believe, and be confirm'd 355

Ere thou from hence depart ; know, I am sent
 To show thee what shall come in future days
 To thee and to thy offspring ; good with bad
 Expect to hear ; supernal grace contending
 With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear

And pious sorrow ; equally inured
 By moderation either state to bear,
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead
 Safest thy life, and best prepared endure 365
 Thy mortal passage when it comes.—Ascend
 This hill ; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)
 Here sleep below ; while thou to foresight wakest ;
 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd.

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied : 370
 Ascend ; I follow thee, safe Guide, the path
 Thou lead'st me ; and to the hand of Heaven submit,
 However chastening ; to the evil turn
 My obvious breast ; arming to overcome
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won, 375
 If so I may attain.—So both ascend
 In the visions of God. It was a hill,
 Of Paradise the highest ; from whose top
 The hemisphere of earth, in clearest ken,
 Stretch'd out to the amplest reach of prospect lay. 380
 Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,
 Whereon, for different cause, the Tempter set
 Our second Adam, in the wilderness ;
 To show him all Earth's kingdoms and their glory.
 His eye might there command wherever stood 385
 City of old or modern fame, the seat
 Of mightiest empire, from the destined wall
 Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can,
 And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,
 To Paquin of Sinean kings ; and thence 390
 To Agra and Lahor of great Mogul,
 Down to the golden Chersonese ; or where
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since
 In Hispahan ; or where the Russian Ksar
 In Mosco ; or the Sultan in Biance, 395
 Turchestan-born ; nor could his eye not ken
 The empire of Negus to his utmost port
 Ercoco, and the less maritime kings
 Mombaza, and Quilca, and Melind,

PARADISE LOST.

263

And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm 400
 Of Congo, and Angola furthest south ;
 Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount
 The kingdoms of Almansor, Fez and Sus,
 Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen :
 On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway 405
 The world : in spirit perhaps he also saw
 Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezume,
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat
 Of Atabalipa ; and yet unspoil'd
 Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons 410
 Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed,
 Which that false fruit that promised clearer sight
 Had bred ; then purged with euphrasy and rue
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see ; 415
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd.
 So deep the power of these ingredients pierced,
 Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,
 That Adam, now enforced to close his eyes,
 Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranced ; 420
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
 Soon raised, and his attention thus recall'd :
 Adam, now ope thine eyes ; and first behold
 The effects which thy original crime hath wrought
 In some to spring from thee ; who never touched 425
 The excepted tree ; nor with the snake conspired ;
 Nor sinned thy sin ; yet from that sin derive
 Corruption, to bring forth more violent deeds.
 His eyes he opened, and beheld a field,
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 430
 New reap'd ; the other part sheep-walks and foliis ;
 I' the midst an altar as the landmark stood,
 Rustic, of grassy sward : ~~near~~ anon
 A sweaty reaper from his village brought
 First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf, 435
 Uncull'd, as came to hand : a shepherd next

More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,
 Choicest and best : then, sacrificing, laid
 The inwards and their fat, with incense strow'd,
 On the cleft wood, and all due rites performed. 440

His offering soon propitious fire from Heaven
 Consumed with nimble glance and grateful steam ;
 The other's not, for his was not sincere ;

Whereat he inly raged, and, as they talk'd,
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone 445
 That beat out life ; he fell ; and, deadly pale,
 Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effused.
 Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
 Dismay'd, and thus in haste to the Angel cried :

O Teacher ! some great mischief hath befallen 450
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd ;
 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid ?

To whom Michael thus, he also moved, replied :
 These two are brethren, Adam, and to come
 Out of thy loins ; the unjust the just hath slain, 455
 For envy that his brother's offering found
 From Heaven acceptance ; but the bloody fact
 Will be avenged ; and the other's faith, approved,
 Lose no reward ; though here thou see him die,
 Rolling in dust and gore. To which our sire : 460

Alas ! both for the deed and for the cause ;
 But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way
 I must return to native dust ? O sight
 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel ! 465

To whom thus Michael : Death thou hast seen
 In his first shape on man ; but many shapes
 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead
 To his grim cave, all dismal : yet to sense
 More terrible at the entrance, than within, 470
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die ;
 By fire, flood, famine, by intemperance more
 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring

PARADISE LOST.

	265
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew Before thee shall appear ; that thou may'st know	475
What misery the inabstinence of Eve Shall bring on Men. Immediately a place Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark ; A lazar-house it seem'd ; wherein were laid Numbers of all diseased ; all maladies	480
Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms Of heartsick agony, all feverous kinds, Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs, Intestine stone and ulcer, colic-pangs, Demonic frenzy, moping melancholy, And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy, Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence, Dropsies, and asthmas, and joint-racking rheuma	485
Dire was the tossing, deep the groans ; Despair Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch ; And over them triumphant Death his dart Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoked With vows, as their chief good and final hope. Sight so deform what heart of rock could long Dry eyed behold ? Adam could not, but wept,	490
Though not of woman born ; compassion quell'd His best of man, and gave him up to tears A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess ; And, scarce recovering words, his plaint renew'd :	495
O miserable mankind, to what fall Degraded, to what wretched state reserved ! Better end here unborn. Why is life given To be thus wrested from us ? rather, why Obtruded on us thus ? who, if we knew What we receive, would either not accept Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down ; Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus The image of God in Man, created once So goodly and erect, though faulty since, To such unsightly sufferings be debased	500
Under inhuman pains ? Why should not Man,	505
	510

Retaining still divine similitude
 In part, from such deformities be free,
 And, for his Maker's image sake, exempt ?
 Their Maker's image, answer'd Michaël, then 515
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilified
 To serve ungovern'd Appetite ; and took
 His image whom they served, a brutish vice,
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.
 Therefore so abject is their punishment, 520
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own ;
 Or if his likeness, by themselves defaced ;
 While they pervert pure Nature's healthful rules
 To loathsome sickness ; worthily since they
 God's image did not reverence in themselves. 525
 I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.
 But is there yet no other way, besides
 These painful passages, how we may come
 To death, and mix with our connatural dust ?
 There is, said Michaël, if thou well observe 530
 The rule of *Not too much* ; by temperance taught,
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st ; seeking from thence
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,
 Till many years over thy head return :
 So mayst thou live ; till, like ripe fruit, thou drop 535
 Into thy mother's lap ; or be with ease
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd ; for death mature :
 This is Old Age ; but then thou must outlive [change
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty ; which will
 To wither'd, weak, and gray ; thy senses then, 540
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,
 To what thou hast ; and, for the air of youth,
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume 545
 The balm of life. To whom our ancestor :
 Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
 Life much ; bent rather, how I may be quit,
 Fairest and easiest, of this cumbrous charge ;

PARADISE LOST.

267

Which I must keep till my appointed day 550
 Of rendering up, and patiently attend
 My dissolution. Michaël replied :
 Nor love thy life, nor hate ; tut what thou livest
 Live well ; how long, or short, permit to Heaven :
 And now prepare thee for another sight. 555
 He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon
 Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds
 Of cattle grazing ; others, whence the sound
 Of instruments, that made melodious chime,
 Was heard, of harp and organ ; and, who moved 560
 Their stops and chords, was seen ; his volant touch,
 Instinct through all proportions, low and high,
 Flew and pursued transverse the resonant fugue. †
 In other part stood one who, at the forge
 Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass 565
 Had melted (whether found where casual fire
 Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,
 Down to the veins of earth ; thence gliding hot
 To some cave's mouth ; or whether wash'd by stream
 From underground ;) the liquid ore he drain'd 570
 Into fit moulds prepared ; from which he form'd
 First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought
 Fusil or graven in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side, a different sort [seat
 From the high neighbouring hills, which was their
 Down to the plain descended ; by their guise 576
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid ; nor those things last, which might preserve
 Freedom and peace to Men ; they on the plain 580
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents, behold !
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay,
 In gems and wanton dress ; to the harp they sung
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on :
 The men, though grave, eyed them ; and let their eyes
 Rove without rein ; till, in the amorous net 586
 Fast caught, they liked : and each his liking chose ;

And now of love they treat, till the evening star,
 Love's harbinger, appear'd ; then, all in heat
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke 590
 Hymen, then first to marriage rites invoked .

With feast and music all the tents resound.
 Such happy interview, and fair event
 Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,
 And charming symphonies, attach'd the heart 595
 Of Adam, soon inclined to admit delight,

The bent of nature ; which he thus express'd :
 True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel bless'd ;
 Much better seems this vision, and more hope
 Of peaceful days portends, than those two pass'd ; 600
 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse ;
 Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus Michaël : Judge not what is best
 By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet ;
 Created, as thou art, to nobler end 605
 Holy and pure, conformity divine.

Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant were the tents
 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race
 Who slew his brother ; studious they appear 610
 Of arts that polish life, inventors rare ;

Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit
 Taught them ; but they his gifts acknowledged none.
 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ;
 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd

Of Goddesses so blithe, so smooth, so gay, 615
 Yet empty of all good wherein consists
 Woman's domestic honour and chief praise ;
 Bred only and completed to the taste

Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,
 To dress, and trol the tongue, and roll the eye : 620
 To these that sober race of men, whose lives
 Religious titled them the sons of God,

Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
 Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles
 Of these fair atheists ; and now swim in joy, 625

PARADISE LOST.

209

Erelong to swim at large ; and laugh for which
The world erelong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft :

O pity and shame, that they, who to live well
Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread
Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint !

But still I see the tenor of Man's woe

Holds on the same, from Woman to begin

From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,
Said the Angel, who should better hold his place
By wisdom, and superior gifts received.

But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread

Before him, towns, and rural works between ,

Cities of Men with lofty gates and towers, 640 +

Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,

Giants of mighty bone and bold emprise ;

Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,

Single or in array of battle ranged

Both horse and foot, nor idly mustering stood ; 645

One way a band select from forage drives

A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,

From a fat meadow ground ; or fleecy flock,

Ewes and their bleating lambs over the plain,

Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly, 650

But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray ;

With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;

Where cattle pastured late, now scatter'd lies

With carcasses and arms the ensanguined field,

Deserted : Others to a city strong 655

Lay siege, encamp'd ; by battery, scale, and mine,

Assaulting : others from the wall defend

With dart and javelin, stones, and sulphurous fire ;

On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.

In other part the sceptred heralds call 660

To council, in the city-gates ; anon

Gray-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd

Assemble, and harangues are heard : but soon,

In factious opposition ; till at last,
 Of middle age one rising, eminent 665
 In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,
 Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace,
 And judgment from above : him old and young
 Exploded, and had seized with violent hands,
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence 670
 Unseen amid the throng ; so violence
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
 Lamenting turn'd full sad : O ! what are these, 675
 Death's ministers, not men ? who thus deal death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
 Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew
 His brother ; for of whom such massacre
 Make they, but of their brethren ; men of men ? 680
 But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven
 Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost ? +
 To whom thus Michael : These are the product
 Of those ill mated marriages thou saw'st ; [selves
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of them-
 Abhor to join ; and, by imprudence mix'd, 685
 Produce prodigious births of body or mind.
 Such were these giants, men of high renown ;
 For in those days might only shall be admired,
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd ; 690
 To overcome in battle, and subdue
 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
 Of human glory ; and for glory done
 Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerors, 695
 Patrons of mankind, Gods, and sons of Gods ;
 Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.
 Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on Earth ;
 And what most merits fame, in silence hid.
 But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst
 The only righteous in a world perverse, 701

PARADISE LOST.

871

And therefore hated, therefore so beset
 With foes, for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his Saints; him the Most High
 Wrapp'd in a balmy cloud with winged steeds 706
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God
 High in salvation and the climes of bliss,
 Exempt from death; to show thee what reward
 Awaits the good; the rest what punishment; 710
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.
 He look'd, and saw the face of things quite changed;
 The broken throat of war had ceased to roar;
 All now was turn'd to jollity and game,
 To luxury and riot, feast and dance; 715
 Marrying or prostituting, as befel,
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair
 Allured them; thence from cups to civil broils.
 At length a reverend sire among them came,
 And of their doings great dislike declared, 720
 And testified against their ways; he oft
 Frequented their assemblies, where he met,
 Triumphs or festivals; and to them preach'd
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls
 In prison, under judgments imminent: 725
 But all in vain: which when he saw, he ceased
 Contending, and removed his tents far off;
 Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk;
 Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and height;
 Smear'd round with pitch; and in the side a door 731
 Contrived; and of provisions laid in large,
 For man and beast: when lo, a wonder strange!
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small
 Came sevens, and pairs: and enter'd in as taught 735
 Their order: last the sire and his three sons,
 With their four wives; and God made fast the door.
 Meanwhile the south-wind rose, and, with black wings
 Wide-hovering, all the clouds together drove

From under Heaven ; the hills to their supply 740
 Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,
 Sent up amain ; and now the thicken'd sky
 Like a dark ceiling stood ; down rush'd the rain
 Impetuous ; and continued, till the earth
 No more was seen ; the floating vessel swum 745
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp
 Deep under water roll'd ; sea cover'd sea,
 Sea without shore ; and in their palaces, 750
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,
 All left in one small bottom swum embark'd.
 How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad, 755
 Depopulation ! Thee another flood,
 Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd,
 And sunk thee as thy sons ; till, gently rear'd
 By the Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
 Though comfortless ; as when a father mourns 760
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;
 And scarce to the Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint
 O visions ill foreseen ! Better had I
 Lived ignorant of future ! so had borne
 My part of evil only, each day's lot 765
 Enough to bear ; those now, that were dispensed
 The burden of many ages, on me light
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth
 Abortive, to torment me ere their being,
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall 771
 Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent ;
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel, 775
 Grievous to bear : but that care now is pass'd,
 Man is not whom to warn ; those few escaped

PARADISE LOST.

273

Famine and anguish will at last consume,
 Wandering that watery desert : I had hope,
 When violence was ceased, and war on earth, 780
 All would have then gone well ; peace would have
 crown'd

With length of happy days the race of man ;
 But I was far deceived ; for now I see
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
 How comes it thus ? unfold, celestial Guide, 785
 And whether here the race of Man will end.

To whom thus Michaël : Those, whom last thou
 saw'st

In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void ; 790
 Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,
 Subduing nations, and achieved thereby
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey ;
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 Surfeit, and lust ; till wantonness and pride 795
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace. :

The conquer'd also, and enslaved by war,
 Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose
 And fear of God ; from whom their piety feign'd
 In sharp contest of battle found no aid 800

Against invaders ; therefore, cool'd in zeal,
 Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords
 Shall leave them to enjoy ; for the earth shall bear
 More than enough, that temperance may be tried : 805
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd ;
 Justice and temperance, truth and faith forgot ;

One man except, the only son of light
 In a dark age, against example good,
 Against allurement, custom, and a world 810
 Offended : fearless of reproach and scorn
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish ; and before them set

The paths of righteousness, how much more safe
 And full of peace; denouncing wrath to come 815
 On their impenitence; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observed
 The one just man alive; by his command
 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheldst,
 To save himself and household from amidst 820
 A world devote to universal wrack.
 No sooner he, with them of man and beast
 Select for life, shall in the ark be lodged,
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts
 Of Heaven set open on the Earth shall pour 825
 Rain, day and night; all fountains of the deep,
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp
 Beyond all bounds; till inundation rise
 Above the highest hills: then shall this mount
 Of Paradise by might of waves be moved 830
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,
 Down the great river to the opening gulf,
 And there take root an island salt and bare,
 The haunt of seals, and orcs, and seamews' clang: 835
 To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought
 By men who there frequent or therein dwell.
 And now, what further should ensue, behold. ↓
 He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood, 840
 Which now abated; for the clouds were fled,
 Driven by a keen north wind, that, blowing dry,
 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;
 And the clear sun on his wide watery glass
 Gazed hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew, 845
 As after thirst; which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole
 With soft foot towards the deep; who now had stopp'd
 His sluices, as the Heaven his windows shut.
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground, 850
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.

PARADISE LOST.

275

And now the tops of hills, as rocks, appear ;
 With clamour thence the rapid currents drive,
 Towards the retreating sea, their furious tide.
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies, 855

And after him, the surer messenger,
 A dove sent forth once and again to spy
 Green tree or ground, whereon his foot may light :
 The second time returning, in his bill
 An olive-leaf he brings, pacific sign : 860

Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark
 The ancient sire descends, with all his train :
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,
 Grateful to Heaven, over his head beholds
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow 865

Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,
 Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.
 Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad,
 Greatly rejoiced ; and thus his joy broke forth :

O thou, who future things canst represent 870
 As present, heavenly Instructor ! I revive
 At this last sight ; assured that Man all live,
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.

Far less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice
 For one man found so perfect and so just
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world
 From him, and all his anger to forget.

But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heaven
 Distended, as the brow of God appeased ? 880
 Or serve they, as a flowery verge, to bind
 The fluid skirts of that same watery cloud,
 Lest it again dissolve, and shower the earth ?

To whom the Archangel : Dexterously thou aim'st ;
 So willingly doth God remit his ire, 885
 Though late repenting him of Man depraved ;
 Grieved at his heart, when looking down he saw
 The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh
 Corrupting each their way ; yet, those removed,

Such grace shall one just man find in his sight, 890

That he relents, not to blot out mankind ;

And makes a covenant never to destroy

The earth again by flood ; nor let the sea

Surpass his bounds ; nor rain to drown the world,

With man therein or beast ; but, when he brings 895

Over the earth a cloud, will therein set

His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look,

And call to mind his covenant : day and night,

Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost, 899

Shall hold their course ; till fire purge all things new,

Both Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XII.

The Ar gal Michael continues, from the Flood, to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain who that Seed of the Woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,
Though bent on speed; so here the Archangel paused
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restored,
If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;
Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes: 5

Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
And Man, as from a second stock, proceed.
Much thou hast yet to see; but I perceive
Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine
Must needs impair and weary human sense: 10
Henceforth what is to come I will relate;
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

This second source of Men, while yet but few,
And while the dread of judgment past remains
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
With some regard to what is just and right
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace;
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
Corn, wine, and oil; and, from the herd or flock,
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid, 20

With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,
 Shall spend their days in joy unblamed ; and dwell
 Long time in peace, by families and tribes
 Under paternal rule : till one shall rise
 Of proud ambitious heart ; who, not content 25
 With fair equality, fraternal state,
 Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
 Concord and law of nature from the earth ;
 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game) 30
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous.
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd
 Before the Lord ; as in despite of Heaven,
 Or from Heaven claiming second sovereignty ; 35
 And from rebellion shall derive his name,
 Though of rebellion others he accuse.
 † He with a crew, whom like ambition joins
 With him or under him to tyrannize,
 Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find 40
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of Hell :
 Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build
 A city and tower, whose top may reach to Heaven ;
 And get themselves a name ; lest, far dispers'd 45
 In foreign lands, their memory be lost ;
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.
 But God, who oft descends to visit men
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower
 Obstruct Heaven-towers ; and in derision sets
 Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase
 Quite out their native language ; and, instead,
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown : 55
 Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud,
 Among the builders ; each to other calls
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,

PARADISE LOST.

279

As mock'd they storm : great laughter was in Heaven,
 And looking down, to see the hubbub strange, 60
 And hear the din : thus was the building left
 Ridiculous, and the work *Confusion* named.

Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeas'd :

O execrable son ! so to aspire
 Above his brethren ; to himself assuming 65

Authority usurp'd, from God not given :

He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,

Dominion absolute ; that right we hold

By his donation ; but man over men

He made not lord ; such title to himself 70

Reserving, human left from human free.

But this usurper his encroachment proud

Stays not on Man ; to God his tower intends

Siege and defiance : wretched man ! what food

Will he convey up thither, to sustain 75

Himself and his rash army ; where thin air

Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,

And famish him of breath, if not of bread ?

To whom thus Michael : Justly thou abhorr'st

That son, who on the quiet state of men 80

Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue

Rational liberty ; yet know withal,

Since thy original lapse, true liberty

Is lost, which always with right reason dwells

Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being 85

Reason in man obscured or not obey'd,

Immediately inordinate desires

And upstart passions catch the government

From reason ; and to servitude reduce

Man, till then free. Therefore, since he permits 90

Within himself unworthy powers to reign

Over free reason, God, in judgment just,

Subjects him from without to violent lords ;

Who oft as undeservedly enthrall

His outward freedom : tyranny must be ; 95

Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.

Yet sometimes nations will decline so low
 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,
 But justice and some fatal curse annex'd,
 Deprives them of their outward liberty ; 100
 Their inward lost : witness the irreverent son
 Of him who built the ark ; who, for the shame
 Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,
Servant of servants, on his vicious race.
 Thus will this latter, as the former world, 105
 Still tend from bad to worse ; till God at last,
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes ; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways ; 110
 And one peculiar nation to select
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoked,
 A nation from one faithful man to spring :
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
 Bred up in idol-worship : O, that men 115
 (Canst thou believe ?) should be so stupid grown,
 While yet the patriarch lived who escaped the flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in wood and stone
 For Gods ! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes
 To call by vision, from his father's house, 121
 His kindred, and false Gods, into a land
 Which he will show him ; and from him will raise
 A mighty nation ; and upon him shower
 His benediction so that in his seed 125
 All nations shall be bless'd : he straight obeys ;
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes :
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith
 He leaves his Gods, his friends, and native soil,
 Ur of Chaldea, passing now the ford 130
 To Haran ; after him a cumbrous train
 Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude ;
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.

ARADISE LOST.

261

Canaan he now attains ; I see his tents 135
 Pitch'd about Sechom, and the neighbouring plain
 Of Moreh ; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his progeny of all that land,
 From Hamath north^r to the Desert south
 (Things by their names I call, thou yet unnamed ;)
 From Hermon east to the great western Sea ; 141
 Mount Hermon, yonder sea ; each place behold
 In prospect, as I point them ; on the shore
 Mount Carmel ; here, the double-founted stream,
 Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons 145
 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed : by that seed
 Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise
 The Serpent's head ; whereof to thee anon 150
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch bless'd,
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
 A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves ;
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown :
 The grandchild, with twelve sons increased, departs
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd 156
 Egypt, divided by the river Nile ;
 See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths
 Into the sea : to sojourn in that land
 He comes, invited by a younger son 160
 In time of dearth ; a son, whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that realm
 Of Pharaoh : there he dies, and leaves his race
 Growing into a nation, and now grown
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks 165
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them slaves
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant males :
 Till by two brethren (these two brethren call'd
 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim 170
 His people from enthrallment, they return,
 With glory and spoil, back to their promised land.

But first, the lawless tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard,
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire; 175
 To blood ushed the rivers must be turn'd ;
 Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill
 With loathed intrusion, and fill all the land ;
 His cattle must of rot and murrain die ;
 Botches and blains must all his flesh emboss, 180
 And all his people ; thunder mix'd with hail,
 Hail mix'd with fire, must rend the Egyptian sky,
 And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls ;
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,
 A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down 185
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green ;
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three days ;
 Last, with one midnight stroke, all the first-born
 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds 190
 The river-dragon tamed at length submits
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart ; but still, as ice
 More harden'd after thaw ; till, in his rage
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea 195
 Swallows him with his host ; but them lets pass,
 As on dry land, between two crystal walls ;
 Awed by the rod of Moses so to stand
 Divided, till his rescued gain their shore :
 Such wondrous power God to his saint will lend, 200
 Though present in his Angel ; who shall go
 Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire ;
 By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire ;
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues : 205
 All night he will pursue ; but his approach
 Darkness defends between till morning watch ;
 Then through the fiery pillar, and the cloud,
 God looking forth will trouble all his host, 209
 And craze their chariot-wheels : when by command

Moses once more his potent rod extends
 Over the sea ; the sea his rod obeys ;
 On their embattled ranks the waves return
 And overwhelm their war : the race elect
 Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance 215
 Through the wild Desert, not the readiest way ;
 Lest, entering on the Canaanite alarm'd,
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude ; for life 220
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on.
 This also shall they gain by their delay
 In the wide wilderness ; there they shall found
 Their government, and their great senate choose 225
 Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd :
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound,
 Ordain them laws ; part, such as appertain 236
 To civil justice ; part, religious rites
 Of sacrifice ; informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destined Seed to bruise
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God 238
 To mortal ear is dreadful : they beseech
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease ; he grants what they besought,
 Instructed that to God is no access
 Without Mediator, whose high office now 240
 Moses in figure bears ; to introduce
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,
 And all the Prophets in their age the times
 Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus, laws and rites
 Establish'd, such delight hath God in men 245
 Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes
 Among them to set up his tabernacle ;
 The Holy One with mortal men to dwell .

By his prescript a sanctuary is framed
 Of cedar, overlaid with gold ; therein **250**
 An ark, and in the ark his testimony,
 The records of his covenant ; over these
 A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings
 Of two bright Cherubim ; before him burn
 Seven lamps as in a zodiac representing **255**
 The heavenly fires ; over the tent a cloud
 Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night ;
 Save when they journey, and at length they come,
 Conducted by his Angel, to the land
 Promised to Abraham and his seed :—the rest **260**
 Were long to tell ; how many battles fought ;
 How many kings destroy'd ; and kingdoms won ;
 Or how the sun shall in mid Heaven stand still
 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,
 Man's voice commanding, Sun, in Gibeon stand, **265**
 And thou, moon, in the vale of Aialon,
 Till Israel overcome ! so call the third
 From Abraham, son of Isaac ; and from him
 His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.
 Here Adam interposed : O send from Heaven, **270**
 Enlightener of my darkness, gracious things
 Thou hast reveal'd ; those chiefly which concern
 Just Abraham and his seed ; now first I find
 Mine eyes true-opening, and my heart much eased ;
 Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts, what would become **276**
 Of me and all mankind : but now I see
 His day, in whom all nations shall be bless'd ;
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those **280**
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth
 So many and so various laws are given ;
 So many laws argue so many sins
 Among them ; how can God with such reside ?
 To whom thus Michael : Doubt not but that sin **285**
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;

PARADISE LOST.

285

And therefore was law given them, to evince
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up
 Sin against law to fight : that when they see
 Law can discover sin, but not remove, 290
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,
 Just for unjust : that in such righteousness
 To them by faith imputed, they may find 295
 Justification towards God, and peace
 Of conscience ; which the law by ceremonies
 Cannot appease ; nor Man the mortal part
 Perform ; and, not performing, cannot live.
 So law appears imperfect ; and but given 300
 With purpose to resign them, in full time,
 Up to a better covenant ; disciplined
 From shadowy types to truth ; from flesh to spirit ;
 From imposition of strict laws to free
 Acceptance of large grace ; from servile fear 305
 To filial ; works of law to works of faith.
 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God
 Highly beloved, being but the minister
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;
 But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, 310
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell
 The Adversary Serpent, and bring back
 Through the world's wilderness long-wander'd Man
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.
 Meanwhile they, in their earthly Canaan placed, 315
 Long time shall dwell and prosper ; but when sins
 National interrupt their public peace,
 Provoking God to raise them enemies ;
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
 By judges first, then under kings ; of whom 320
 The second, both for piety renown'd
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive
 Irrevocable, that his regal throne
 For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing

All Prophecy, that of the royal stock 335
 Of David (so I name this king) shall rise
 A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold,
 Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust
 All nations; and to kings foretold of kings
 The last; for of his reign shall be no end. 330
 But first, a long succession must ensue;
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom famed,
 The clouded ark of God, till then in tents
 Wandering, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.
 Such follow him, as shall be register'd 335
 Part good, part bad; of bad the longer scroll;
 Whose foul idolatries, and other faults
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense
 God, as to leave them, and expose their land,
 Their city, his temple, and his holy ark, 346
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st
 Left in confusion; Babylon thence call'd.
 There in captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of seventy years; then brings them back,
 Remembering mercy, and his covenant sworn 346
 To David, stablish'd as the days of Heaven.
 Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
 Their lords, whom God disposed, the house of God
 They first reedify; and for awhile 350
 In mean estate live moderate; till, grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
 But first among the priests dissension springs,
 Men who attend the altar, and should most
 Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings 355
 Upon the temple itself: at last they seize
 The sceptre, and regard not David's sons;
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed King Messiah might be born
 Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a star, 360
 Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come;
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire

His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold :
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night ; 365
 They gladly thither haste, and by a choir
 Of squadron'd Angels hear his carol sung.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire
 The power of the Most High : He shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign : 370
 With Earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens
 He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy
 Surcharged, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,
 Without the vent of words ; which these he breathed .
 O prophet of glad tidings, finisher 375
 Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain :
 Why our great Expectation should be call'd
 The seed of Woman : Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in the love of Heaven ; yet from my loins 380
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God Most High : so God with Man unites !
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise
 Expect with mortal pain : say where and when 384
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel.
 To whom thus Michael : Dream not of their fight,
 As of a duel, or the local wounds
 Of head or heel : not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil
 Thy enemy ; nor so is overcome 390
 Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled, not to give thee thy death's wound :
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works
 In thee and in thy seed : nor can this be, 395
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,
 Obedience to the law of God, imposed
 On penalty of death, and suffering death ;
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will row : 400

So only can high Justice rest appaid.
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 Alone fulfil the law ; thy punishment
 He shall endure, by coming in the flesh 405
 To a reproachful life and cursed death ;
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe
 In his redemption ; and that his obedience,
 Imputed, becomes theirs by faith ; his merits
 To save them, not their own, though legal, works. 410
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphemed,
 Seized on by force, judged, and to death condemn'd
 A shameful and accursed, nail'd to the cross
 By his own nation ; slain for bringing life :
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies, 415
 The law that is against thee, and the sins
 Of all mankind, with him there crucified,
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust
 In this his satisfaction ; so he dies,
 But soon revives : Death over him no power 420
 Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems ;
 His death for Man, as many as offer'd life 425
 Neglect not, and the benefit embrace
 By faith not void of works : this godlike act
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have died,
 In sin for ever lost from life ; this act
 Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength, 430 +
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms ;
 And fix far deeper in his head their stings
 Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,
 Or theirs whom he redeems ; a death, like sleep,
 A gentle wafting to immortal life. 435
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay
 Longer on earth than certain times to appear
 To his disciples, men who in his life

PARADISE LOST.

266

Still follow'd him ; to them shall leave in charge
 To teach all nations wh'at of him they learn'd 440
 And his salvation ; them who shall believe
 Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to life
 Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,
 For death, like that which the Redeemer died 445
 All nations they shall teach ; for, from that day
 Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins
 Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons
 Of Abraham's faith wher'ever through the world ;
 So in his seed all nations shall be bless'd. 450
 Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend
 With victory, triumphing through the air
 Over his foes and thine ; there shall surprise
 The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains
 Through all his realm, and there confounded leave ;
 Then enter into glory, and resume 455
 His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in Heaven ; and thence shall come,
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,
 With glory and power to judge both quick and dead ;
 To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward 461
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,
 Whether in Heaven or Earth ; for then the Earth
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place
 Than this of Eden, and far happier days. 465
 So spake the Archangel Michael ; then paused,
 As at the world's great period ; and our sire,
 Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied :

O Goodness infinite, Goodness immense ! †
 That all this good of evil shall produce, 470
 And evil turn to good ; more wonderful
 Than that which by creation first brought forth
 Light out of darkness ! Full of doubt I stand,
 Whether I should repent me now of sin
 By me done and occasion'd ; or rejoice 475
 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring

To God more glory, more good-will to Men
 From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.
 But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 490
 His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,
 The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide
 His people, who defend? Will they not deal
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?
 Be sure they will, said the Angel; but from Heaven
 He to his own a Comforter will send, 496
 The promise of the Father, who shall dwell
 His Spirit within them; and the law of faith,
 Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,
 To guide them in all truth; and also arm 498
 With spiritual armour, able to resist
 Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts;
 What man can do against them, not afraid,
 Though to the death; against such cruelties
 With inward consolations recompensed, 496
 And oft supported so as shall amaze
 Their proudest persecutors: for the Spirit,
 Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends
 To evangelize the nations, then on all
 Baptized, shall them with wondrous gifts endue 500
 To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive
 With joy the tidings brought from Heaven: at length
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run, 506
 Their doctrine and their story written left,
 They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven
 To their own vile advantages shall turn 510 †
 Of lucre and ambition; and the truth
 With superstitions and traditions taint,
 Left only in those written records pure,
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.

PARADISE LOST.

291

Then they shall seek to avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join 516
 Secular power ; though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating
 The Spirit of God, promised alike and given
 To all believers ; and, from that pretence, 520
 Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force
 On every conscience ; laws which none shall find
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then
 But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind 525
 His consort Liberty ? What, but unbuild
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,
 Their own faith, not another's ? For, on earth,
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard
 Infallible ? yet many will presume : † 530
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all, who in the worship persevere
 Of spirit and truth ; the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfied ; truth shall retire 535
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found : so shall the world go on,
 To good malignant, to bad men benign ;
 Under her own weight groaning ; till the day
 Appear of respiration to the just, 540
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promised to thy aid,
 The Woman's Seed ; obscurely then foretold,
 Now simpler known thy Saviour and thy Lord ;
 Last, in the clouds, from Heaven to be reveal'd 545
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve
 Satan with his perverted world ; then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purged and refined,
 New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,
 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love ; 550
 To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.
 He ended ; and thus Adam last replied

How soon hath thy prediction, Seer bless'd,
 Measured this transient world, the race of time,
 Till time stand fix'd; Beyond is all abyss, 555
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.

Greatly instructed I shall hence depart;
 Greatly in peace of thought; and have my fill
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560

Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God; to walk
 As in his presence; ever to observe
 His providence; and on him sole depend, 565

Merciful over all his works, with good
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak;
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise
 By simply meek: that suffering for truth's sake
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570

And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;
 Taught this by his example, whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever bless'd.

To whom thus also the Angel last replied.
 This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum 575

Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the stars
 Thou knew'st by name, and all the ethereal powers,
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,
 Or works of God in Heaven, air, earth, or sea,
 And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst, 580

And all the rule, one empire; only add
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith,
 Add virtue, patience, temperance; add love,
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath 585

To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess
 A Paradise within thee, happier far.—
 Let us descend now therefore from this top
 Of speculation; for the hour precise
 Exacts our parting hence; and see! the guards, 590

By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect
 Their motion ; at whose front a flaming sword,
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round :
 We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ;
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd 595
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd
 To meek submission : thou, at season fit,
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard ;
 Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,
 Tho' great deliverance by her seed to come 600
 (For by the Woman's seed) on all mankind :
 That ye may live, which will be many days,
 Both in one faith unanimous, though sad,
 With cause, for evils past ; yet much more cheer'd
 With meditation on the happy end. 605

He ended, and they both descend the hill ;
 Descended, Adam to the bower, where Eve
 Lay sleeping, ran before ; but found her waked ;
 And thus with words not sad she him received :
 Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know ;
 For God is also in sleep ; and dreams advise, 611
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good
 Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress
 Wearied I fell asleep : but now lead on ;
 In me is no delay ; with thee to go, 615
 Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay
 Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me
 Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,
 Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.
 This further consolation yet secure 620
 I carry hence ; though all by me is lost,
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsafed,
 By me the Promised Seed shall all restore.

So spake our mother Eve ; and Adam heard
 Well pleased, but answer'd not : for now too nigh 625
 The Archangel stood ; and, from the other hill
 To their fix'd station, all in bright array
 The Cherubim descended on the ground

Gliding meteorous, an evening mist
 Risen from a river o'er the marish glides, 630
 And gathers ground fast at the labourer's heel
 Homeward returning. High in front advanced,
 The brandish'd sword of God before them blazed,
 Fierce as a comet; which with torrid heat
 And vapour, as the Libyan air adust, 635
 Began to parch that temperate clime; whereat
 In either hand the hastening Angel caught
 Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate
 Led them direct, and down the cliffs first
 To the subjected plain; then disappeared. 640
 They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld
 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
 Waved over by that flaming brand; the gate
 With dreadful faces throng'd, and fiery arms:
 Some natural tears they dropp'd, but wiped them soon;
 The world was all before them, where to choose 646
 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide:
 They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,
 Through Eden took their solitary way









3 2044 050 539 857



